

LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS
AT URBANA-CHAMPAIGN
From the collection
of James Collins,
Drumcondra, Ireland.
Purchased, 1918

941.5

Ab87



The person charging this material is responsible for its return to the library from which it was withdrawn on or before the **Latest Date** stamped below.

Theft, mutilation, and underlining of books are reasons for disciplinary action and may result in dismissal from the University.

UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS LIBRARY AT URBANA-CHAMPAIGN

OCT 10 1975

OCT 8 1975

JUL 27 1975

NOV 26 1984

NOV 3 1984

(

3

AN
ABRIDGMENT
OF THE
HISTORY OF IRELAND,
FROM
THE EARLIEST ACCOUNTS
TO THE
PRESENT TIME,
ON THE PLAN
OF DR. GOLDSMITH'S HISTORY OF ENGLAND,
For the use of Schools and Private Education,
WITH EXERCISES AT THE END OF EACH CHAPTER, AND RECAPITULATIONS
AT THE END OF EACH BOOK.
WITH A
CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE.

DUBLIN:

Printed at the Hibernia Press Office, No. 1, Temple Lane,
FOR JOHN CUMMING, NO. 16, LOWER ORMOND QUAY, AND GEORGE
COWIE, AND CO. 31, FOLTRY, LONDON.



1410
941.5

A& 87

PREFACE.

WHILE the Press, every day, offers to those who are engaged in the education of youth, some additional assistance, to enable them to give to their pupils a competent knowledge of the History of other parts of the British Empire, no attempt has been hitherto made to facilitate the study of the History of Ireland.

To supply this want, the following "Abridged History of Ireland, from the Earliest Accounts to to the Present Time," has been prepared for the use of Schools and private Education. The Author has carefully excluded from this Work all occurrences, the narration of which is incompatible with the culture of that moral sense, whose delicacy should never be unnecessarily invaded; and conceiving that the events farthest removed from the present scene of action, are those of which age has the least chance of acquiring a knowledge, when not

436271

learned in youth, he has dedicated the greater part of the History to transactions prior to the accession of his present Majesty,³ while no important event of his reign has been omitted.

The Work is divided into Books and Chapters ; to the end of each Chapter, is subjoined a number of questions arising out of the Chapter ; at the close of every Book, there is a Recapitulation of questions relating to all the Chapters in the Book, but confined to the more important events of the History, and passing by the less interesting details, which are noticed in the Exercises of each Chapter.

HISTORY OF IRELAND.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAPTER I.

Obscurity of early History—Division of Irish History into Periods.—Arrival of the Partholarians—Nemedians—Belgians—Danonians.

THE same obscurity which involves the origin of almost every nation, covers the early History of Ireland with much uncertainty ; and, although it can be traced to a very ancient date, still fable and inconsistency are, in the first accounts, so mixed with truth, that it is impossible to separate facts from falsehood.

In tracing the History of Ireland, it will be found convenient to divide it into the following periods :— First, from the earliest accounts to the introduction of Christianity ; second, from thence to the invasion of Henry II. ; third, from the landing of Henry to the arrival of Sir Edward Poynings, A. D. 1494 ; fourth, from 1494 to the surrender of Limerick ; fifth, from the surrender of Limerick to the Union ; sixth, from the Union to the present time.

/ FIRST PERIOD.

THE only materials from which the history of the first period can be collected, are of very questionable

authority, commencing with an account of the Partholanians, who are said to have landed in Ireland in the year of the world 1969. These adventurers were soon followed by others, who attempted the subjugation of the first settlers, but were defeated in a sanguinary battle, in which so many were slain, that a plague, produced by the putrefaction of the dead, carried off all the inhabitants, after the first colony had been in possession thirty years.

A. M. After a desolation of thirty years, Ireland was next visited by a colony under Nemedius, from 2029. the Euxine Sea. This leader had in his train, some African pirates, called Fomorians, between whom, and the Nemedians, a long contest for dominion was maintained, which ended in the expulsion of the latter, after having kept possession of the island for 217 years.

A. M. The Belgians, called by the Irish Firlbogs, and said to be descendants of the Nemedians, 2657. now arrived with five thousand men, under five brothers, who divided the kingdom into five parts; in each of these, one of the brothers reigned, under the title of king: and Slangey, king of Leinster, was monarch of the whole kingdom.

This colony kept possession for 80 years, during the greater part of which factious broils gave rise to many bloody contests; but under the last monarch of this race, the island enjoyed peace and plenty.

A. M. A swarm of Danonians coming, probably, from Great Britain, sailed to Ireland; and, on their 2737. arrival, set fire to their ships, that retreat being impossible, they might, with the greater determination, prepare to win the island from the present inhabitants. A bloody battle was fought on the plains of Moytura, in which the Belgians were defeated with the loss of 10,000 men and their monarch: the vanquished disdaining to live in subjection, retreated to the islands of Aran, Ila,

Man, and some of the Hebrides. During a space of 194 years, the History of Ireland furnishes no particulars that are capable of exciting any interest.

EXERCISES.

Into what periods is this History divided? Who are said to have been the first inhabitants? In what year did they settle? How long did the first colony exist, and what destroyed it? Who succeeded the Partholopians? By whom were the Nemedians expelled, and how long did they remain in Ireland? How did the Belgians divide the kingdom? By whom were the Belgians conquered? What means did the Danonians take to cut off all possibility of retreat?

CHAPTER II.

Invasions of the Milesians—Reign of Ollam Fodla—Kimbath—Pentarchy abolished—Restored—Disgrace of the Fileahs—Feidlim—Nial of the nine Hostages.

A. M. 3234. A Spanish colony called Milesians, from being commanded by Heremon, Heber, and Amergin, the sons of Prince Milesius, having landed in Ireland, overpowered the Danonians, and firmly established themselves in the island. These brothers at first divided the kingdom; but disputes soon arose, which brought them into the field; and Heremon having defeated and slain his brothers Heber and Amergin, remained sole monarch. From Heremon, the monarchy passed through several princes, of whom little more is known, than that they were murdered. In this interval, gold was found near the river Liffey, and colours were made the distinguishing marks of different ranks.

A. M. 3236. The reign of Ollam Fodla, who maintained his sovereignty forty years, contributed greatly to the improvement of the kingdom. This

monarch instituted a triennial assembly of the states, and made many wise and wholesome laws, by which he governed his kingdom in peace: but the descendants of Ollam Fodla renewed the scenes of factious hostility, which had proved so fatal before his time,

and all again was anarchy, until Kimbath ascended the throne. He restored the institutions of Ollam Fodla, built the palace of Eamania in Ulster, abolished the pentarchal division, and partitioned the kingdom among his twenty-five children: he was, however, murdered.

A. M. In the reign of Achy III. the Pentarchy was restored. At this time the Fileahs, who expounded the laws, abused their power so much, by arbitrary and unjust determinations, that, the popular indignation against them rising to a great height, they were driven out of Munster and Leinster, and took refuge with Connor king of Ulster.

This Prince, dreading the consequence of the total expulsion of such a body, many of whom were innocent of the crimes attributed to all, and perceiving the difference between reforming the abuses of an institution and its total overthrow, ordered these lawyers, who were also the poets and historians of the age, to reduce the whole body of laws to such simple rules, that every man might become competent to form a probable opinion on his own case: having executed this, they were restored to favor.

A. D. Feidlim, surnamed the Legislator, enacted a law of retaliation, by which every offender was punished according to his crime: In cases of robbery, restitution was made according to the value stolen; in personal injuries, limb for limb was the rule of this law.

From this period to the reign of Nial, of the nine Hostages, an almost unvarying scene of contention for

the different thrones, and assassinations of rival candidates, is presented to us by the Irish records.

Nial, called of the nine Hostages, from having received hostages from so many different countries, in concert with the Scots, carried his arms into France with considerable success; but was treacherously slain on the banks of the Loire, by a prince of Leinster. In one of Nial's expeditions, St. Patrick, then a youth of sixteen, was taken, and kept for many years in Ireland as a slave.

EXERCISES.

Why were the Milesians so called? How did the brothers first divide the kingdom? Who became sole monarch? When was gold discovered? What was made the distinguishing marks of different ranks? How long did Ollam Fodla reign? What did he institute? How did he govern the kingdom? Were his institutions observed after his death? Who restored them? What did Kimbath do in his reign? When was the pentarchy restored? What class of the people became obnoxious in the reign of Achy III.? How were they restored to favour? By whose advice did they act? What law did Feidlim institute? What was the state of the kingdom between his reign and Nial? Why was he called of the Nine Hostages? Where was he killed? Whom did he make prisoner?

CHAPTER III.

Introduction of Christianity—St. Patrick—Danes and Norwegians—Turgesius—Normans—Malachy—Death of Turgesius—Second Invasion by the Danes—Brien Boiroimhe's great Defeat of the Danes—Consequence of the Danish Invasions.

PERIOD II.

A. D. 430. THE exact time at which Christianity was first preached in Ireland, is not accurately known; it is however certain that, at a very early period,

attempts were made to convert its inhabitants from paganism, in aid of which, a bishop, named Palladius, was sent from Rome with twelve assistants. They were, however, driven out of the country ; though, at the same time, a few native ecclesiastics were making some considerable progress in different directions.

At length, in the reign of Laogaire, St. Patrick arrived, and, after some unsuccessful attempts, succeeded in establishing a bishopric in the north of Ireland.

Although, after the arrival of St. Patrick, the profession of Christianity spread very rapidly, it does not appear that any great moral improvement was effected ; and we find the same factious and ambitious feelings operating with as much violence as before : contentions for tribute, founding of churches and religious houses, persecution from pagan princes, still unconverted, and perpetual struggles for power, present a busy scene in Irish history, though, without any striking events, until the invasions of the Danes, which began in the eighth century.

A. D. At this period, large bodies of Danes and Norwegians, sometimes called O-tmen and Easter-
797. lings, had adopted a regular system of piracy, by which such wealth was gained, that the chief men of those states were induced to take a part in their expeditions, and share their booty. From plundering ships, they advanced to making descents on the sea-coasts of different countries, in large bodies and in different divisions. The state of Ireland, at this time, distracted and divided by its civil broils, offered a particularly favorable scene for these wandering pirates.

The Danes and Norwegians, tho' sometimes severely chastised by some of the Irish monarchs, continued to repeat their acts of plunder, burning and desolating wherever they came, but always retreating to their vessels, until Turgesius, a Norwegian prince, landed with a

greater number of his countrymen than had hitherto acted in concert. Several smaller parties, who were pillaging in different parts of the kingdom, flocked to his standard ; and these free-booters now determined to establish themselves in this country.

The Norwegian fixed himself at Armagh, from which the clergy were driven ; and such was the infatuation of the Irish leaders, that although it was evident they might by uniting, have expelled the invaders, they only exposed themselves, by their own divisions, to his attacks.

A. D. A descent was made by the Normans in numerous bodies, who, if possible, exceeded the Danes
833. in cruelty and rapine. The Danes becoming alarmed, and dreading that the natives might, by the assistance of these new invaders, deprive them of their conquests, Turgesius collected all his forces, and, after a desperate and bloody conflict, succeeded in driving the Normans out of the kingdom.

Animated by this success, the Danes determined on extending their acquisitions, and prepared to fortify some strong holds, to secure themselves from both natives and invaders. Reused, at length, by the sight of these preparations, Malsechlin, or Malachy, king of Meath, marched against a body of the Danes, whom he defeated ; but Malsechlin was not supported : and Turgesius, having received reinforcements, assumed the title of monarch, and kept the whole kingdom in a state of subjugation.

After having held Ireland in a state of cruel bondage for some years, he was, by a stratagem of Malachy's, made prisoner and put to death, together with a number of his chief officers : a general slaughter of the Danes followed.

A fresh body of Norwegians now arrived and made themselves masters of the sea-ports ; these were followed by some Danes, who dispossessed their brother pirates:

From this, until the reign of Brien Boiroidmbe, the History of Ireland presents an uniform scene of plunder and oppression on the part of the Danes and Norwegians, with occasional resistance, and desperate efforts, void of system or perseverance, on the part of the natives, to free themselves from the galling yoke of their invaders, rendered more secure by the bloody feuds of the Irish chieftains. Brien Boiroidmbe, after having signalized himself in several engagements, both against the native chiefs, while establishing himself on the throne of Ireland, and also against the Danes, fought a pitched battle with the invaders at Clontarffe, in which the Danes were so severely beaten, that, although not driven entirely out of the kingdom, their power was so broken, they never after were able to resume their long supported superiority.

But, although a single day was sufficient to destroy their power, the effects which it had produced were not so easily overcome: they had pillaged and destroyed almost all the churches and monasteries in the kingdom; they had interrupted that progress toward civilization, which was then making over Europe; by supporting, at different times, one or other of the petty chieftains, against the nominal monarchs of the kingdom, they prevented those monarchs from realising the sole dominion, which, when centred in one person, could have directed the strength and resources of the country to such objects as true policy would point out; and so slowly did the country recover from the consequences of the Danish yoke, that, in the following century, when the English established themselves, few traces remained either of the learning, which had attracted students from every nation in Europe, and had educated the celebrated Alfred; or, of the arts, of which the buildings, particularly the round towers, whose ruins lie scattered over the country, prove the existence.

EXERCISES.

Who was Palladius? What was he sent to Ireland for? Did he succeed? In whose reign did St. Patrick arrive to preach Christianity? Where did he establish a bishopric? When did the invasions of the Danes and Norwegians begin? Who was their chief commander? Where did Turgesius fix himself? When did the Normans land? Who conquered them? What induced the king of Meath to attempt the expulsion of the Danes? Why did he fail? By whom was Turgesius at length conquered? Who subdued the Danes?

CHAPTER IV.

State of Ireland—Dermod M'Murchad carries off the Wife of O'Ruarc—Henry II.—Bull of Adrian—Dermod M'Murchad.

A. D. 1150. AT this period, Ireland was under the dominion of five petty monarchs, who ruled in Meath, Munster, Ulster, Leinster, and Connaught; within their territories were several septs, or clans, each subject to its own immediate chieftain, who always led them in battle, and by whom they were ruled during peace. The whole kingdom was subject to one monarch, who did not, however, owe this exaltation to any law of inheritance, but generally to that of arms; and as almost every monarch had to win the sceptre by his sword, and the favour of some of the petty kings, so few of them wielded it with any great power, and none as absolute sovereigns of the island.

The succession to the minor thrones was not established on any firmer foundations; the successor was elected in the life-time of the reigning prince, by the law of Tanistry, which directed the election to be decided by those warlike qualities, so necessary for the leader of a people constantly engaged in arms: but this

election was not considered very binding, and few ascended any throne in the kingdom, without wading to it through the blood of one or more rival princes. Each of these petty kings made war or peace, without consulting the chief monarch ; and as almost every event gave rise to some dispute, and every quarrel was decided in the field, one part or other of the interior of the island was always the theatre of war, in which different parties engaged as they were led by treaty, connection, or the love of plunder. The sea-ports were in general chiefly inhabited by Danes and Ostmen, who benefited the country by their commercial pursuits. At the same time, that the possession of such posts by men who had not a common interest with the other inhabitants, served to expose the kingdom to the attacks of an invader.

A. D. For some years, the power of two princes,
 1150. Turlogh O'Connor and O'Lochlan, was so equally balanced, that although O'Connor was generally acknowledged king of Ireland, still O'Lochlan possessed an influence which greatly diminished the authority of his rival.

A. D. During the struggle between these candidates,
 1153. Dermot Mac Murchad, king of Leinster, had carried off the wife of O'Ruarc, prince of Breffney. The injured husband applied to Turlogh for assistance, in revenging this insult ; and, in return, promised to aid the king of Connaught in supporting his claim against O'Loghlan. Turlogh consented, led his forces into Leinster, and restored his wife to O'Ruarc ; who, with the assistance of his new ally, was often enabled, during his life-time, to make the Leinster monarch feel the effects of that resentment he had so unjustifiably provoked. But the death of O'Connor gave Dermot, in turn, an opportunity of wreaking his vengeance on the Bressian : Dermot was the first to acknowledge

O'Lochlan, who supported him against the ally of his former rival.

A. D. Henry II. an ambitious and enterprising prince,
1156. now filled the throne of England, to which he anxiously wished to annex the kingdom of Ireland; and to give strength to any opportunity that might occur, he obtained from Pope Adrian IV. a bull, investing him with the kingdom of Ireland, giving him authority "to reduce the people to obedience unto laws," for the purpose of propagating the christian faith, and securing to the church of Rome the yearly pension, called, "Peter's Pence." To this Adrian was induced by a double motive: he wished to oblige Henry, and also to secure to the see of Rome the same ecclesiastical dominion which was then exercised by the Pope over so many countries. Hitherto, the clergy of Ireland had been in the habit of managing their own religious concerns, and regulating the church government of the kingdom without any reference to the opinion of the Roman Pontiff, or without contributing to support his see.

The continuation of the quarrel between Dermot and O'Ruarc, gave Henry the opportunity he had so long desired. O'Lochlan had not long enjoyed his
A. D. sovereignty, when he perpetrated a horrid cru-
1167. elty on a prince with whom he had concluded a treaty, and whose eyes he then put out. This raised so powerful a combination against him, that he was defeated and slain in a battle fought with his tributary chieftains. Roderic, son to the late king of Connaught, was now raised to the supreme power.

Roderic, as soon as he found himself firmly established, led his forces into Leinster, accompanied by O'Ruarc. Dermot, whose savage character had rendered him as detestable at home as he was abroad, finding that his tributaries were deserting to the enemy,

fled in dismay ; while the victorious Roderic, having received the submission of Leinster and Munster, returned in triumph to Meath, where he held an assembly of the states, which was most numerous attended, and in which he exhibited such magnificence and grandeur, as seemed to indicate the possession of greater wealth and authority than was enjoyed by his predecessors.

EXERCISES.

How was Ireland divided ? How were the kings elected ? Who were rivals for the title of king of Ireland ? What crime did Dermot M'Murchad commit ? To whom did O'Ruarc apply for assistance ? What offer did he make ? Who supported Dermot against O'Ruarc ? Who was at that time king of England ? What authority had Henry for invading Ireland ? Why did the Pope grant Henry's request ? Of what cruelty was O'Loughlin guilty ? Who defeated O'Loughlin ? Who succeeded him in the supreme power ?

RECAPITULATION.

What makes it difficult to ascertain the true history of Ireland in the first period ? At what year does it commence ? Who were the first colonists ? Who the second ? Whom did the Belgians find in possession ? Who were in possession when the Milesians arrived ? In what year is the Spanish invasion fixed ? By whom was the pentarchy abolished ? Who were the Fileahs ? How did they abuse their power ? How was this abuse corrected ? What was the nature of the law enacted by Feidlim ? When does the name of St. Patrick first occur in Irish history ? What was the state of Christianity in Ireland before the arrival of St. Patrick, in the reign of Laogaire ? What foreign monarch was educated in Ireland ? How else is the learning of Ireland proved ? What peculiar remains have we of the arts of that period ? What was the nature of the expeditions which the Danes were making in the eighth century ? What made Ireland a favourable scene for their attacks ? Which of them established his power permanently in Ireland ? What enabled the Danes to maintain their superiority ? By whom was their power broken ? What influence had the Danish yoke on Ireland ? What was the nature of the Irish government in 1150 ? By what law was the succession to the different thrones regulated ? What gave rise to the expulsion of Dermot Mac Murchad ? What means had Henry II. taken to sanction his views on Ireland ? What prevented Dermot from making resistance in his own kingdom ? What were Roderic's proceedings after expelling Dermot ? What appearances did his court exhibit ?

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAPTER I.

Dermod applies to Henry—Obtains succour in England—Returns to Ireland—Attacked by Roderic—Makes Peace—Arrival of the English—Wexford taken—Grants to the English Barons—Dermod reinstated—Aspires to the whole Kingdom—Arrival of Strongbow.

PERIOD III.

A. D. 1168. IN the mean time, Dermod was seeking in exile the means of reinstating himself in his dominions, and applied, in his distress, to Henry, then in Guienne, for his assistance in recovering his throne, which he offered to hold in vassalage under the crown of England.

Henry was prevented, by his continental affairs, from embarking personally in the enterprise; but gave Dermod letters, which authorised such of his subjects as might wish to volunteer their services, to aid the exiled prince.

Under the authority of Henry's letters, and by the aid of liberal promises, Dermod engaged Richard Earl of Pembroke and Chepstow in England, and in Wales, Robert Fitzstephen, and Maurice Fitzgerald, to lend him their support: he then returned, privately, to his kingdom, to conceal himself in the monastery of Ferns, which he had founded, until spring, when his English succours were to arrive.

Dermod's arrival was not long concealed from Roderic, who, with O'Ruarc, again marched into Leinster; Dermod, being strongly posted, offered some resistance, but was soon overpowered and made peace, resigning to Roderic the kingdom of Leinster, with the exception of ten cantreds, and giving to O'Ruarc 100 ounces of gold.

A. D. At length, however, the arrival of Dermod's
1170. allies gave him an opportunity of shewing, that his abdication was only nominal. Fitzstephen landed near Wexford with 30 knights, 60 esquires, 300 archers, and was soon joined by Maurice de Pendergast, with 10 knights and 200 archers : with their united forces they laid siege to Wexford, inhabited chiefly by Danes. After an assault, which was bravely and successfully resisted, Fitzstephen set fire to his fleet, to shew his men, that they must rely on their valour. The determined spirit displayed by this act, had such an effect on the garrison, that the town surrendered ; and Dermod, who had before joined the besiegers, entered in triumph.

Dermod now invested Fitzstephen, and Fitzgerald, who was hourly expected, with the lordship of this city and its domain ; Hervey of Mount-Morris, uncle to Strongbow, who accompanied Fitzstephen, was granted a large tract between Wexford and Waterford ; and it is remarkable, that the first British colony which was planted here, retain to this day, after a lapse of nearly 700 years, such peculiarities of language and manners, that they are strongly distinguished from the surrounding inhabitants.

Fitzgerald next arrived with 10 knights, 30 esquires, and 100 archers, and joined the other adventurers, with whose aid Dermod was enabled to bring an army into the field, by which Roderic was defeated in several battles.

The Prince of Ossory, who was particularly hostile to Dermod, was obliged to submit ; and Dermod recovered nearly the whole of his kingdom.

Not content with these advantages, Dermod became ambitious of dethroning Roderic, and bringing the whole island into subjection under his own sceptre. Accordingly he dispatched a messenger to the Earl of Strigul, who had not yet come over, to hasten his departure, and re-

presented the conquest which might be effected, if his promised reinforcement should arrive.

Richard, not choosing to rely on the written permission given by Henry, had a personal interview with him in Normandy, to obtain his licence for invading Ireland; and though he received from the English monarch only a cold consent, prepared to fulfil his original promise to Dermot. Raymond Le Gross, with ten knights and 70 archers, were first sent over by Strongbow: these troops landed near Waterford, and defeated a body of Irish of superior numbers, by whom they were attacked. Shortly after, the Earl, with 200 knights and 1000 archers, followed his victorious vanguard, and making himself master of Waterford, marched to Dublin, which was taken by assault.

Dermot now married his daughter Eva to Strongbow, and dying soon after, was succeeded in his kingdom of Leinster by his son-in-law, who made preparation for subduing the whole kingdom. To check this attempt, Roderic, and the other Irish princes, besieged the Earl in Dublin with a numerous army, which was routed by Strongbow, who, at the head of his knights and their followers, made a desperate sally.

EXERCISES.

What did Dermot do when driven into exile? What assistance did Henry give him? What use did he make of Henry's letters? Where did Dermot conceal himself on his return to Ireland? On what terms did he make peace with Roderic? In what year did the English first arrive? By whom were the first detachments commanded? What was their first enterprise? How did they intimidate the garrison? How did Dermot reward the English? What is remarkable of the first colony? What Englishman arrived next? What was the success of Dermot and his allies? Why did Dermot press Strongbow to come over? Where did Strongbow land? Where did he march to after taking Waterford? How was Dublin taken? How did Strongbow rescue himself when besieged? To whom was he married? Who succeeded Dermot?

CHAPTER II.

Henry recalls his subjects—Visits Ireland—Submission of the Irish Chieftains—Division of the Pale into counties—English Law—Brehon Law... Council nominated.—Grants confirmed.

HENRY, alarmed at the progress made by the Earl, whose encrease of power might soon enable him to become a troublesome neighbour, issued a mandate, recalling all his subjects from Ireland, and prepared in person to finish the conquest they had commenced. Before his arrival, the adventurers satisfied the English monarch of their allegiance; and having offered him all the strong posts they possessed, were allowed to keep the remainder of their acquisitions in vassalage to the English crown.

A. D. Henry landed at Waterford, with 500 knights
1072. and other soldiers; from thence, he marched to different parts of the kingdom, and received the submission of several of the Irish chieftains.

Henry next marched to Dublin, where he feasted his new tributaries in a magnificent manner.

The English monarch, during his residence in Dublin, made such regulations as were necessary for the future government of his newly acquired dominions.

The lands in the immediate occupation of the English barons to whom they were granted, were divided into counties, in which sheriffs and other officers were appointed: the English subjects living within this district, called the Pale, were to be governed by the laws and constitution of England, while the natives remained still subject to their code, the Brehon law, the distinguishing feature of which was, the commutation of punishment for fines: courts of justice were established in Dublin, and a council nominated, who should, with the consent of the

nobles, elect a successor, in case of the death of the chief governor.

This council with the nobles, for many years exercised the power of a parliament, and was so called, though there did not exist then any distinction of lords and commons; and it was several years before the parliaments assumed that regularity of form and proceeding, which they latterly adopted.

Having confirmed to Strongbow, and the other barons, their possessions, and made grants to several English lords, Henry departed.

EXERCISES.

Why did Henry recal his subjects from Ireland? How did the adventurers satisfy him? When did he land? Where? What forces had he? What did he first do? How was he occupied in Dublin? What was the Pale? By what laws were the settlers to be governed? What was the nature of the Brehon law? What provisions were made in case of the death of a chief governor?

CHAPTER III.

Irish Chieftains take up Arms—State of English Army—Strongbow made chief Governor.—Expedition of Raymond Le Gross—Retires in disgust—Engagement near Thurles—Strongbow retreats to Waterford—Roderic takes the Field—Distress of Strongbow—Return of Raymond—Capture of Limerick.

THE Irish chieftains, not conceiving their submission to Henry to be of a very binding nature, and perceiving that several petty disputes, between their own subjects and the settlers, made the latter impatient of the English power, took the opportunity of the absence of Earl Richard, and of other English lords, to throw off the

mask. At this time, the English army was in a mutinous state, and its commander, Hervey, of Mount Morris, and his second in command, Raymond Le Gross, were of such opposite opinions, as to afford a favourable opportunity of putting an end to the English power in Ireland. To remedy these evils, Henry reluctantly entrusted the sole direction of affairs in Ireland to Strongbow, who immediately returned with his commission to Dublin, and dispatched to Henry's aid, in Normandy and England, several English commanders, together with the garrison of Waterford. Thus the Earl's forces were greatly weakened, and those whom he retained were so discontented with their commander, that Strongbow was obliged to remove Mount Morris, and appoint Raymond to the command.

Raymond, leading his troops to chastise the defection of some petty chieftain, overran a great part of the country, from which he collected a large booty; and having successfully resisted an attack, made by the inhabitants of Cork to recover the plunder, entered Waterford in triumph.

In return for these services, Raymond demanded from the Earl the hand of his sister Basilia, together with some posts of honour, which were refused with great coldness by Strongbow, jealous perhaps of Raymond's growing influence; who, mortified at this refusal, retired into Wales, and the command of the army was restored to Mount Morris.

At this period, the principal opposition to the English power, was in Munster. To this point, Mount Morris, anxious to emulate the successes of Raymond, prevailed on Strongbow to turn his attention, and both marched to Cashel with a considerable body of troops. Having ascertained the position and force of the enemy, the Earl, at Harvey's request, sent orders to Dublin for a reio-

forcement from the garrison, which consisted of Ostmen then in the English service.

This detachment reached Thurles on its rout to Cashel and having encamped carelessly, were attacked by O'Brien of Thomond, who, falling on them suddenly, killed 400 and the principal commanders. Richard, on hearing of the defeat of this detachment, retired with precipitation into Waterford.

Encouraged by this success of O'Brien, several of the Leinster Chieftains disclaimed the submission which they had lately made to Henry. Donald Cavanagh, son of the late Dermot MacMorrough, who had hitherto adhered to the English, now declared against them, and laid claim to the throne of Leinster, and Roderic, who had never submitted, united the Princes of Ulster and other Chiefs to act against the common enemy. Strongbow, aware of the consequences of being obliged to act on the defensive, and afraid of a mutiny of his own troops, sent to entreat the return of Raymond to whom he offered those terms which were formerly rejected. Raymond instantly collected thirty leaders of his own kindred, 100 horsemen, and 300 archers, and embarking them in twenty transports, arrived in Waterford at a very critical moment.

The townsmen had planned a massacre of the garrison, and the time fixed for its execution, was that of Raymond's appearance. On his landing, Strongbow and Le Gross, ignorant of the conspiracy, agreed to march to Wexford, as a spirit hostile to their interests was manifesting itself in Leinster.

The garrison left in Waterford was soon after suddenly attacked, many were slain, and the rest driven into the citadel, from which in a short time they recovered possession of the town. In Wexford, Raymond received the hand of Basilia, the office of constable, and stan-

dard-bearer of Leinster, but was in the midst of his festivities called into the field by the advance of Roderic into Meath, at the head of a large army, which Henry had granted to Hugh De Lacy, where he disturbed the English settlers and committed extensive devastation.

The Irish Chieftains, contented with their success in plundering, refused to meet the English army, and the Irish monarch thus deserted was obliged to retire,—while the fall of Donald Kavanagh in another quarter, so disheartened his followers as to give the Earl leisure to resume his operations in Munster.

Limerick was in the possession of the Prince of Thomond—this city is surrounded by the Shannon. Raymond undertook the siege with 600 men, and finding the bridges broken, threw himself into the river, and being followed by his troops, made himself master of the place after a slight resistance.

EXERCISES.

How did the Irish Chieftains act after Henry's departure? What was the state of the English army? How did Henry remedy these evils? On what occasion was Raymond attacked by the citizens of Cork? What occasioned his retirement? Who took the command of the army then? What expedition did he advise? How did it end? What did Strongbow do then? What obliged Roderic to retire? What city did Raymond besiege? How did he take it?

CHAPTER IV.

Roderic sends his submission to Henry—Henry becomes suspicious of the settlers—Commissioners sent over, to order Raymond to England—Distress of the garrison of Limerick—Raymond sent to relieve it—Death of Strongbow—Raymond elected by the council.

RODERIC now convinced that no reliance could be placed on his subordinate Chieftains, resolved to submit

to the English yoke ; but disdaining any submission except to a king, overlooking Strongbow, dispatched to Henry the Archbishop of Tuam, the Abbot of St. Brandon, and his own Chancellor, to offer from him homage and tribute ; on these conditions the Irish monarch retained the uncontrolled administration of his kingdom. The annual tribute was fixed at every tenth merchantable hide from every part of the kingdom, not under the immediate dominion of Henry and his Barons, whose possessions then lay nearly between a line drawn from Drogheda to Dungarvan, and the southern coast.

The English interest seemed now strengthened, but the jealousy which Henry entertained towards his Barons, and their own divisions, again threatened them with destruction ; by several intermarriages, the old English adventurers became so closely connected, as to alarm their monarch ; and the envy of Mount Morris, instigated him to make such representations of Raymond's ambitious views, as induced Henry to send to Dublin four Commissioners, Robert de Poer, Osbert of Hereford, William Bendegar, and Adam of Germany ; two to conduct Raymond to the king ; two to ascertain the views of Strongbow and his fellow adventurers.

A. D. Raymond wisely complied with Henry's orders,
 1176. but while he waited a favourable wind, intelligence arrived that the indefatigable O'Brien of Thomond had besieged Limerick, and reduced the garrison commanded by Meyler of St. Davids to great distress.

Strongbow, though ill prepared to relieve the garrison in person, as he was deprived of his favourite general, but the soldiers obstinately refusing to march except under Raymond, the Commissioners agreed to wait the issue of the expedition, and Raymond with affected reluctance taking the command, marched with 80 knights, 200 horses, 300 archers, and some Irish troops under the

command of the Prince of Ossory. On the approach of Raymond, O'Brien raised the siege, and awaited near Cashel the enemy's approach, where he was attacked in his entrenchments, and defeated.

O'Brien, disheartened by his unequal conquest, made peace, and gave hostages as a security for his allegiance. At this time Cormac, eldest son of Mac Carty, Prince of Desmond, had dethroned and imprisoned his father, who, as he had sworn allegiance to Henry, applied to Raymond for assistance: he marched into Desmond, and reinstated the father on his throne, who in turn imprisoned his son, and then put him to death, and rewarded Raymond with a grant of land. Raymond now received intelligence of Strongbow's death, which the English thought it prudent to conceal from the Irish, until his successor should be elected. Raymond instantly withdrew his troops from Limerick, and entrusted its possession to O'Brien, who, as soon as Raymond had crossed the Shannon, burned the town, declaring it should no longer be a nest for foreigners.

On Raymond's arrival in Dublin, the funeral of the late Earl was performed with great pomp. Strongbow was of tall stature, but slender make, of an even temper in prosperity and adversity: submissive in peace, cautious in council, and undaunted in action. The council nominated Raymond as Strongbow's successor, and the Commissioners satisfied with his conduct, agreed to his election, and made a favourable report to Henry of his intentions.

EXERCISES.

What determined Roderic to submit? To whom did he do homage? What power did he retain? What tribute did he pay? What was the extent of the pale? What alarmed Henry? For what did he send Commissioners? What suspended Raymond's departure? Where did he engage O'Brien? Who conquered? Who applied to Raymond for assistance? Why did he give up Limerick? What did O'Brien do on Raymond's departure? What was Strongbow's character? Whom did the council elect to succeed him?

CHAPTER V.

Fitzandelm chief governor—Irruption into Ulster—John made Lord of Ireland—Administration of De Lacy—John's arrival—Conduct of his courtiers—His recall—State of the country—Roderic dethroned—Henry dies.

A. D. HENRY, whose apprehensions of Raymond Le Gros's intentions were not yet removed, sent over 1177. as chief governor William Fitzandelm, who was attended by some ecclesiastics, bringing a brief from Pope Alexander, confirming the Bull of Adrian.

During the administration of Fitzandelm, who appeared full of the same fears of the adventurers as operated on his sovereign, the English power was greatly weakened. The English lords, discontented with the state of affairs in the east, made under John de Courcey, an irruption into Ulster with indifferent success; and a similar one in Connaught under Milo Decogan. Complaints against Fitzandelm at length effected his recall, and De Lacy was appointed his successor.

Henry now constituted his son John, lord of Ireland, under which title but subservient to his father, John exercised supreme power in Ireland.

The administration of De Lacy was both vigorous and equitable, well calculated to advance the English interest, and to conciliate the Irish. But his popularity soon alarmed Henry, who recalled him from Ireland, but restored him to his office in three months.

A. D. Laurence O'Toole, Archbishop of Dublin, died 1181. and was succeeded by John Comyn, an Englishman. Henry now recalled De Lacy once more, and replaced him by Philip De Braosa, who during a

short administration gave many shocks to the security De Lacy had established.

A. D. John, attended by a numerous train, Glenville
1185. a lawyer, and Geraldus Cambrensis the historian, sailed for Ireland. His arrival, however, gave no strength to the English power; his courtiers treated the Irish Chieftains with such indignities as united them firmly in their common cause, while the arrogance and rapacity of John's attendants estranged the earlier English settlers; several sanguinary tumults were the consequence, and the assassination of De Lacy, gave an additional blow to the English power.

A. D. To repair these disasters, Henry recalled John,
1186. and entrusted the chief government to John De Courcey, who prepared by desperate valour, his best quality, to repair the fortunes of the first adventurers. He soon succeeded, for the Irish Chieftains never had patience for a regular campaign, and disregarding the enemy, when removed from their immediate territories, returned to those desultory broils to which their own quarrels were continually giving rise.

Encouraged by these divisions amongst his enemies, De Courcey advanced incautiously into Connaught, and after a desperate struggle, escaped with considerable loss from the united forces of Connaught and Thomond. The Ulster chiefs took this opportunity of attacking the English settlements in the north, but De Courcey succeeded in re-establishing tranquillity, receiving no opposition from the people of Connaught, who were involved in the confusion occasioned by their own dissensions. Roderic's sons had deposed their father, one of whom was murdered by an assassin hired by his own brother for the purpose. The unfortunate monarch took refuge in the monastery of Cong.

A. D. Henry did not long survive the degradation of
1189. the Irish monarch, and died in 1189.

EXERCISES.

Why did Henry remove Raymond? Who succeeded him? What attempts were made by the English to extend their possessions? Why was Fitzandelm removed? Who succeeded him? Who was made Lord of Ireland? Of what kind was De Lacy's administration? Why was he recalled? By whom was he succeeded? In what year did John visit Ireland? What historian accompanied him? What effect had John's visit on the Irish Chieftains and the Settlers? Who was Governor after John's recall? What Revolution took place in Connaught? When did Henry II. die?

RECAPITULATION.

What return did Dermot offer to make Henry II. for his assistance? What occasioned the increase of English troops after Dermot had recovered his kingdom? What circumstance gave Strongbow a peculiar influence in Ireland? How did Henry act on hearing the success of the first adventurers? How did the Irish Chieftains act on Henry's arrival? What provision did he make for the Government of the settlers? What was the consequence of Raymond Le Gros's retirement? On what occasion did Roderic make an attempt to expel the English? Why did it fail? What city in the south did Raymond take? How did Roderic act when determined to submit? What was his tribute? What were Henry's feelings towards the settlers? Which of the Chief Governors participated in those feelings? What were their effects? What occasioned De Lacy's recall? What was the nature of John's power over Ireland? What effect had his presence in Ireland? What occurred in the family of the king of Connaught? What was Strongbow's character? In what was the conduct of Fitzstephen and the Danonians the same? In what year did Henry land?

BOOK THE THIRD.

CHAPTER I.

John's government of the Kingdom—Cathal, the bloody handed—Conduct of Armoric and his Detachment—William, Earl Marhal, chief Governor—Surrender of Cork—Death of Roderic.

RICHARD, the eldest son and successor of Henry, devoted his life to the holy wars, then raging in the east, and never interfered with his brother John's authority in Ireland. John assumed the title of Earl of Moreton and Lord of Ireland. His first act was, to remove De Courcey from the government, and appoint Hugh De Lacy, the younger, to succeed him. De Courcey, enraged at this slight, retired to Ulster; and, detaching himself from the new deputy, betrayed the weakness of his power.

Among the survivors of the bloody house of Roderic, the most conspicuous was Cathal, the bloody handed: He formed an extensive alliance with the Munster chiefs, who were anxious to be led by him against the English; and the lords of Thomond and Desmond agreed to a treaty of peace, in order to aid with their forces the intentions of Cathal. De Courcey, dreading that the gathering storm would burst on his head, prepared for his defence; and recalled a detachment which, under Armoric, of St. Laurence, was engaged in some petty enterprize. Armoric, and his detachment, were surrounded on their retreat by Cathal's troops; and, finding it impossible to avoid an engagement, which offered no hope of conquest, the cavalry killed their horses to place themselves on the same level with the infantry. The

whole body then, having dispatched the two youngest to De Courcey, marched into the midst of their enemies, and were, after committing dreadful havoc, slain on the field of battle.

These transactions alarmed John, and, to encrease his distress. Dublin was at this time nearly destroyed by an accidental fire. De Lacy was recalled, and William Petit substituted for him, and he again was soon succeeded by William, Earl Marshal of England, the husband of Isabella, daughter of Strongbow and Eva; a connection which pointed him out as one likely to be acceptable to both the natives and the English settlers.

During the administration of the Earl Marshal, Cathal, the prince of Thomond, and Mac Arthy of Desmond, kept the English constantly in the field. The prince of Thomond beat the English at Thurles; but his death, accompanied by the usual contests among the Irish chieftains for his sovereignty, overbalanced his success. Cathal drove the English out of Munster, but, retiring, allowed them to occupy it again, when they were attacked by Mac Carty, and driven out of Limerick.

At this conjuncture, a reinforcement was sent to the English in the south, to relieve the city of Cork, then closely pressed; the detachment was, however, met by the united arms of Connaught and Desmond, and totally defeated: their discomfiture was followed, after a short interval, by the surrender of Cork to the prince of Desmond.

The loss of this important post manifested the weakness of the English; and though they made attempts to re-establish their interests in Munster, these shewed only the superiority of their enemies.

A. D. When Hamo De Valois succeeded William, all
1197. Munster was evacuated by the English; De
Lacy and De Courcey acted in their own pro-

vinces independent of the English government, which with difficulty, retained the province of Leinster.

To provide for the exigences of his government, Valois seized on the property of the see of Dublin ; this produced, between him and Comyn the archbishop, an acrimonious and protracted quarrel. Comyn appealed to John and Richard, without effect. After a lapse of some years, however, Valois made compensation to the see of Dublin for his former usurpation of its property.

A. D. Roderic died at an advanced age in the monastery at Cong, which had been his retreat for many years.
1198.

A. D. In the succeeding year, the death of Richard gave John the united power of Lord of Ireland and king of England.
1199.

EXERCISES.

Who managed Ireland in Richard's reign? What was John's first act? How did De Courcey act? Of what family was Cathal? What did he do? What detachment did his troops surround? How did Armoric and his men act? Why was William, Earl Marshal, made Deputy? What city was closely pressed? What became of the detachment sent to relieve it? To whom did Cork surrender? Who succeeded Earl Marshal? What was the state of the English then? How did Valois give offence? What year did Roderic die in?

CHAPTER II.

John's neglect of Ireland—Independence of the English Barons—Their Contentions—Join with the Irish Chieftains—Plague in Dublin—300 Citizens murdered—John prepares to visit Ireland.

The cares attending his English kingdom, left John little leisure to attend to Ireland, further than renewing

grants, and removing De Valois: Meyler Fitz Henry, natural son to Henry I. and distinguished among the original adventurers, was his successor, but had not a force sufficient to support his government under existing circumstances. De Courcey and De Lacy acted as independent of the English monarch. De Courcey, though he obtained little respite from his chief opponent, O'Nial, of Tir-Owen, still maintained his acquisitions. In the south, William De Burgo, of the family of Fitz-Andelm, taking advantage of the viceroy's weakness, added the possession of Limerick to his other settlements, and threatened to raise in Munster, an independent power, increased by his alliance with Carragh O'Connor whom he successfully supported in dethroning Cathal. The exiled monarch fled to O'Nial, who engaged De Courcey and De Lacy to unite their forces in his cause. De Burgo and the usurper met the invaders; a desperate conflict ensued, in which De Burgo was again the victor. This defeat so alienated O'Nial's subjects, that another chieftain was substituted; and he soon falling in battle, his territory became the scene of fresh factions, usurpations, and massacres.

Notwithstanding the active part De Burgo had taken against Cathal, the fallen monarch engaged him by magnificent promises, to change sides; and Cathal, after dethroning his late ally, found himself reinstated in his sovereignty; but, rejecting with disdain De Burgo's claims, the English baron was preparing to punish this perfidy, when a more formidable enemy demanded his attention.

The viceroy, having collected a formidable force, moved towards Limerick to destroy De Burgo. The Irish chieftains, dreading Meyler and hating De Burgo, offered their services to the former, who, thus placed at the head of the native Irish, reduced the latter to make

offers of submission, which were accepted. Cathal surrendered two parts of Connaught to John, who invested Meyler with the issues and profits of his portion to fortify and improve it.

The disaffection of the English barons to their monarch, had now reached the settlers in Ireland, many of whom participated in the same sentiments of hostility. De Courcey was among the number; and, at the private instigation of De Lacy, he was summoned to appear before John. De Courcey treating the mandate with contempt, De Lacy and his brother received a commission, to send him by force to the king. The brothers having defeated De Courcey, he submitted, appeared before John, and was condemned to perpetual imprisonment; the earldom of Ulster was conferred on Hugh De Lacy, to the prejudice of De Courcey's issue.

A. D. The state of affairs in England, obliged John to
1204. call De Lacy and Meyler Fitz Henry across the channel, while the government of Ireland was entrusted to Walter De Lacy and the Archdeacon of Stafford.

Between this period and the next visit of John to Ireland, he was engaged with Pope Innocent the third, in a sharp contest for the right of ecclesiastical patronage in Ireland. On a vacancy of the see of Armagh, John nominated Humphrey De Tickhuel to fill it: Eugene was elected by the clergy of the diocese, and the election confirmed at Rome. The king forbade the clergy to admit him: Eugene, who was very popular, was, however, after a protracted quarrel, allowed to fill the see.

Dublin was now visited by a severe plague, which raged over all Leinster, and drove the necessitous and the desperate to commit several outrages; the most melancholy of which was, an attack made on the citizens of

Dublin on Easter Monday, in which 300 lost their lives. Their loss was soon replaced, by a colony from Bristol.

The dissensions between John and his English barons, made the king anxious to maintain a larger army than the barons would readily consent to. John, therefore, made his Irish affairs a pretext for assembling his troops ; but, as his power in Ireland was never more firmly supported, owing to the good management of Meyler, he made the conduct of the Lacys, who had protected an obnoxious baron, William, of Brecknock, the ostensible motive for his expedition.

William, who held considerable grants in Munster, was applied to, among other English barons, for hostages ; his wife declared that her children should never be entrusted to him, who had murdered his nephew. To revenge this insult, the arrears due from William's lands in Munster were demanded ; and, in default of payment, John issued an order, to seize his land and person : William, dreading his cruelty, fled into Ireland, and put himself under the protection of De Lacy.

EXERCISES.

What prevented John from attending to Ireland ? How did De Courcey and De Lacy act ? Who chiefly opposed O'Nial ? What did William de Burgo do ? What increased his power ? What was Cathal's fate ? How did he act when defeated ? What stopped De Burgo's career ? Who aided the Deputy ? What sacrifice of his kingdom did Cathal make ? Who was summoned to appear before John ? Why ? How did De Courcey act ? What was his fate ? What was the cause of dispute between John and the Pope ? What happened to the citizens of Dublin ? Under what pretence did John assemble an army ? How did the De Lacys offend ?

CHAPTER III.

Arrival of John—Code of Laws deposited in the Exchequer—New divisions of the Pale—Return of John—Different disturbances—Phelim's application to Henry.

A. D. John landed in June at Dublin, where twenty
 1210. Irish Chieftains attended to do homage. The
 De Lacys and William De Braosa, leaving his family concealed, fled into France.

John deposited in the Exchequer of Dublin, a Code of Laws for the use of the settlers, the nature of whose tenure and services were not hitherto accurately defined.

The Pale was divided into the counties of Dublin, Lowth, Carlow, Kilkenny, Wexford, Waterford, Cork, Kerry, Limerick, Tipperary, to each of which, sheriffs and other officers were appointed.

John having reduced the forts belonging to the De Lacys, he restored them to their possessions, on their paying a fine, at the mediation of the Abbot of St. Taurin; and then, after a visit of three months, departed.

John de Grey, Bishop of Norwich, was the next chief governor; he coined money equal in weight with the currency in England, and maintained the English power so well as to be enabled to send John, when threatened with a French invasion, a company of knights, and 300 well appointed infantry.

De Grey was now succeeded by Henry de Londres, Archbishop of Dublin, in whose administration the Castle of Dublin was finished, for building which, Meyler Fitz-Henry had obtained a grant. The place of the Archbishop, who constantly attended on John, was filled, during his absence, by Geoffry de Maurisco. This Prelate is to be

found steadily adhering to John in all his contests with his Barons and the Pope; and when the English monarch did homage to Pandolf, warmly expressed his indignation at the transaction and the legate's insolence.

A. D. John died and was succeeded by Henry III.
1216. Henry on his accession to the English throne, received an application from Ireland, requesting, that either the queen mother, or his brother should be sent to that kingdom, as its governor. Henry's answer informed Geoffry De Maurisco, that he would consider of this request, and that he granted to his subjects in Ireland the same liberties which had been secured to his English subjects.

The extension of the English settlements had now considerably weakened the power of the Irish Chieftains, when the death of the great Earl of Pembroke in 1219, deprived Ireland of a powerful patron; while the English, who had large possessions in Ireland, asserted and supported their claims in the field, and often gave their own government as much annoyance as the native chieftains. Hugh de Lacy claimed some lands possessed of the late Earl, whose son came into Ireland to defend his possessions: thus were Leinster and Meath exposed to the calamities of war, while the governor was obliged to march into Desmond against the Mac Cartys. On the other hand, Donald O'Brien obtained a grant of his kingdom of Thomond for one hundred pounds a year, and a fine of a thousand marks. To Richard de Burgo Henry granted the reversion of the kingdom of Connaught after the death of Cathal.

A. D. On Cathal's death, his subjects proceeded to
1223. elect a successor. Tirlaugh, Cathal's brother, was elected through the influence of O'Nial, who supported him against the claims of De Burgo. This opposition induced Geoffry de Maurisco to march into Connaught, whence he expelled Tirlaugh, and without sup-

porting De Burgo, established Ædlh, a son of Cathal, in his room. Some incroachments of the English soon brought Ædlh into the field, where he captured a son of Geoffry, but was himself soon after killed in a riot.

A. D. His uncle now reassumed the sovereignty, but was quickly deposed by Richard de Burgo, who had 1223. succeeded De Maurisco as governor, and Phelim son of Cathal, obtained the throne of Connaught. But De Burgo, on finding that Phelim refused to accede to his demands, marched against and captured his lately created king.

Phelim, however, escaped, brought fresh forces into the field, and though his rival was supported by De Burgo, defeated and slew him.

A. D. De Burgo having been removed, Maurice Fitzge- 1233. rald was appointed governor. Phelim took the opportunity of applying to Henry on the subject of his grievances, and requested permission to wait on him in England. Henry addressed his answer to his new governor, and ordered him to give Phelim a safe conduct to England, as soon as the Castle of Melick should be wrested from De Burgo, and Connaught restored to a state of tranquillity.

EXERCISES.

In what year did John revisit Ireland? How many Irish Chieftains did homage? What did he do respecting laws? What division was made of the Pale? How did he act towards the De Lacys? How long did John stay? Who was the next governor? What aid did he send John? Who was Henry de Londres? How did he act when John did homage to Pandolph? What request was made on the accession of Henry III.? What did he grant his subjects in Ireland? What Earl connected with Ireland, died in 1219? On what terms did Donald O'Brien obtain a grant of Thomond? What was granted to Richard de Burgo on Cathal's death? Did De Burgo enjoy this grant? Who was placed on the throne of Connaught by De Burgo? How did he act? What was Henry's reply to Phelim?

CHAPTER IV.

*Richard, Earl Marshal, comes to Ireland—His Death—
Phelim arrives at the Court of Henry—His gratitude
to Henry—Phelim driven from his Kingdom.*

A. D. On the death of William, Earl Marshal, his
1231. estates and honours devolved on his brother
Richard, whose bold and independent spirit
rendered him particularly obnoxious to Henry, by whom
he was driven out of England, without being allowed to
take possession of his estates.

Earl Richard came to Ireland, where the descendant
of Strongbow and Dermot was most favourably received.
The Earl having collected a considerable force, passed
into England, and intimidated Henry so, that he gave
him possession of his rights, and accepted his homage:
but the remonstrances of the Earl against the Bishop of
Winchester, brought on him again his sovereign's ven-
geance—he was declared a traitor, and banished; and
a mandate sent to the viceroy, and the other lords, au-
thorising the arrest of Richard, if he should land in
Ireland; and, in return for him, offering his great es-
tates in Ireland.

The prospect of such prey was too tempting. Rich-
ard, after his landing in Ireland, was treacherously in-
vited to a conference with the other barons, on the plains
of Kildare; where, finding himself basely betrayed, he
took an affecting leave of his young brother, and then,
disdaining to fly, was foully murdered by the followers
of his opponents.

The intelligence of Richard's death effected in Eng-
land what his arms did not—the expulsion of the
Bishop of Winchester; and the expressions of resentment

at this deed, both in Ireland and England, were so strong, that Henry was obliged to address a letter of conciliation to the citizens of Dublin.

The English barons in Ireland now proceeded to divide the late earl's lands, until his brother, who for some time, lay under Henry's displeasure, sued for a reconciliation, which he obtained. This served to check the depredations on his Irish estates; and Maurice Fitzgerald was so alarmed at his restoration to royal favour, that he went to London, and, through the king's mediation, a formal reconciliation took place, Fitzgerald having first exculpated himself by oath, from any concurrence in the death of Earl Richard. He also proposed to found a monastery, with a reverend conventual body, to offer up constant prayers for the soul of the deceased.

While Fitzgerald was at Henry's court, Phelim, the prince of Connaught, arrived; and, having obtained audience of Henry, pleaded successfully against the repeated aggressions of De Burgo, but wisely avoided to inculcate Fitzgerald, who had lent his assistance to Phelim's oppressors. Henry ordered the governor to restrain the outrages of De Burgo, and reinstate his liegeman, Phelim, in his possessions. An opportunity soon occurred for Phelim's shewing his gratitude to Henry.

This monarch sent orders to Fitzgerald, to lead into Wales such forces as he could collect in Ireland, from both English and Irish lords: Phelim alone obeyed this summons. Fitzgerald was now removed from the chief government of Ireland, on the ground of his having delayed to bring his succours into Wales. He retired to his possessions in the south of Ireland, where, assuming an independent authority, and resisting the control of the English monarch, he filled that part of Ireland with new commotions. The death of Richard De Burgo, Hugh De Lacy, and Geoffrey De Maurisco, was the cause of other disturbances: and, in the north, the arms of Tir-

connel employed the new viceroy, son to Maurisco, during his administration, in subduing this chief, who, at last, fell through the treachery of his own people.

In the west, Walter, successor to Richard de Burgo, and in right of his wife, the daughter and heiress of Hugh de Lacy, Earl of Ulster, presuming on this great accession of power, asserted the claims of his family in Connaught. Phelim was again driven from his territory, but had the spirit to regain and keep it by force of arms against the English, now encouraged by the rising disorders in England, to despise the royal authority.

The distractions of Ireland were, at this period, considerably aggravated by the suspension of the English laws, which were formally extended only to the English settlements, and were, even there, constantly trampled on by the English lords, who ever refused to see the country governed under the system of the English code. So early as 1228, remonstrances were made to Henry on this subject, and renewed in 1246, but his most pressing mandate, that they would permit the land to be governed by the laws of England, had no effect on the English barons; while Henry granted to several Irish lords, letters patent, entitling them and their vassals to the benefits of the English laws.

The distresses of the English monarch allowed him to take no other means of redressing these grievances, than by sending to the government, Englishmen, unconnected with the settlers, who were, however, too powerful for those deputies; and, with this view, Alan De La Zouch, Stephen Longespee, William Den, Richard de Capella, David Barry, Robert de Ufford, Richard de Exeter, and James Audley, were sent over in rapid succession.

EXERCISES.

Who succeeded William Earl Marshal? Why was he driven out of England? Why was he favourably received in Ireland? What happened on his return to England? What was his fate on his return to Ireland? What effect did the intelligence of his death produce? How were the Irish barons prevented from dividing his estates? What Irish prince visited Henry's court? How was he received by Henry? How did Phelim shew his gratitude to Henry? Who created disturbances in the west of Ireland? What aggravated the disturbances in Ireland? What patents did Henry grant? What means did he take for redressing grievances in Ireland?

CHAPTER V.

Grant of Ireland to Prince Edward—Contests in Munster—Geraldines defeated—Imprison the Deputy—Exactions of Henry and the Pope—Dispute about Patronage—Citizens of Dublin excommunicated—Accession of Edward the First.

PRINCE Edward, on his marriage with the infant of Spain, was invested by his father with the whole of Ireland, except the cities and counties of Dublin and Limerick, the town of Athlone, the lands of the church, and the custody of vacant benefices, to be held by Edward and his heirs by a delegated authority, but never to be separated from the crown of England. All lands in Ireland were now called the lands of Lord Edward, the officers and ministers held under him, and all writs ran in his name. Soon after this grant, Prince Edward was ordered to repair to Ireland; but, unfortunately for that kingdom, the misfortunes of the early parts of his father's reign, and the prince's passion for crusading, prevented her feeling the presence of a governor, with power sufficient to control the oppressors, and relieve the oppressed, while Ireland continued to suffer under all the effects of a feeble government, neglected laws, a factious nobility, and local feuds.

In the south, the death of Maurice Fitzgerald encou-

raged the Mac Cartys to rise against the Geraldines, over whom they obtained a decided victory, in which Thomas Fitzgerald and his son, 18 barons, 15 knights, and several of inferior note were slain.

At first, the Mac Cartys acted as men defending their rights, but still subordinate to the English government ; and, at the moment of their success, received, with respect, a new deputy, who landed on their coast, and was permitted to pass unmolested to the seat of government.

The progress, however, of their arms, against some native septs, called Walter de Burgo into the field : he defeated the Mac Cartys and slew their leader, when the Geraldines, profiting by this defeat of their enemies, rose again into power. They were now opposed by de Burgo, and the country became distracted by their bloody feuds. The deputy interposed, but the heads of the Geraldine party, seized him at a conference, and sent him, with Richard de Burgo, son of Walter, and other lords, prisoners, to one of their own castles. This outrage raised a general alarm : an assembly was convened at Kilkenny, to consider the state of the kingdom : the captives were released, and Henry commanded the rival lords no longer to disturb the public peace. The deputy Barry restrained the Geraldines ; but de Burgo raised fresh commotions in Connaught, by his claims on that territory. Æth O'Connor, successor to Phelim, resisted his encroachments, and gave him a signal defeat : similar scenes were acted in other quarters, while famine and disease aggravated the misfortunes of the kingdom. To heighten these calamities, Henry and the Pope made severe exactions from both clergy and laity : to the clergy, Henry gave great offence, by bestowing on foreigners and Englishmen the patronage of the church ; and the Irish clergy made an ordinance against the admission of any of the

English nation into a canonicate in any of their churches. Against this the king was obliged to call to his aid the authority of the Pope, who annulled the ordinance.

To repair the losses they sustained by the several sums levied off them, the clergy increased in 1250. their demands on the laity: the citizens of Dublin resisted these demands, and were excommunicated. They remonstrated in vain, and were at last reduced to submit to a degrading composition.

Edward I. now ascended the throne of England. A. D. From a monarch of his abilities, already well 1272. acquainted with Ireland, much might have been expected for the improvement of its political state; but the wars which Edward carried on in Scotland and Wales, gave him no leisure to attend to its concerns.

Maurice Fitzgerald, the present deputy, marched to repress an inroad of the natives into the English settlement, but the governor's force was too weak: he was betrayed by his own people, captured, and thrown into prison.

Glenvil, son-in-law to de Lacy, succeeded him, and had as little success: the capital was 1273. insulted, and Glenvil defeated in attempting to repress the enemy. Ulster was torn by the contentions of its own chiefs, English and Irish, and infested by Scottish free-booters. Fitzmaurice, when released from confinement, retired to his own lands, and, in conjunction with lord Theobald Butler, added fresh commotions to disturb the public peace. They made an attack on the Irish of Munster, forcing the O'Briens, who had lately shewn pacific dispositions, to take up arms against their invasion. The power of the Geraldines had been considerably encreased by the marriage of Juliana, daughter of Maurice, with Thomas de Clare, son of the Earl of Gloucester. Edward granted considerable lands

in Thomond, to de Clare, who now led into Ireland a numerous train to take possession. These grants provoked the pride and sometimes the just resentment of the natives. The O'Briens exclaimed loudly against the encroachments of this new colony; the young lord treating their remonstrances with disdain, the contest was soon brought to the decision of the sword; the Geraldines were overthrown, and the O'Briens acknowledged sovereigns of Thomond.

De Clare, now in great distress, made a most pathetic representation to Edward of his losses and injuries; Edward had lately transmitted his mandate to the Irish prelates, to interpose their spiritual authority for composing the public disorders; and now, together with the account of the civil war in Munster, arrived intelligence of an alarming commotion in Connaught, and the slaughter of the Irish prince of this province by a rival chieftain; provoked by such a multiplicity of vexatious accounts Edward passionately recalled Ufford to England, who left Fulburne, a friar, to fill his place. This encouraged the disaffected in Leinster, and information of fresh outrages followed. Ufford quickly satisfied Edward, and was remanded to put down the commotions, which his absence had encouraged.

EXERCISES.

On what occasion was prince Edward invested with a grant of Ireland? What was reserved in this grant? What prevented prince Edward from taking the command in Ireland? What encouraged the Mac Cartys to rise against the Geraldines? Which party was defeated, and with what loss? What were the dispositions of the Mac Cartys at first? How is this proved? By whom were they defeated? How did the Geraldines treat the deputy? What took place in Connaught? What aggravated the distresses of the kingdom? What demands did Henry and the Pope make? What ordinance did the Irish clergy make? What prevented Edward I. from attending to the affairs of Ireland? Who was Thomas de Clare? How did he become entitled to possessions in Ireland? How was he reduced to distress? Why was de Ufford recalled? What reception did he meet with?

CHAPTER VI.

Irish apply for the English law—Chieftains unite under Daniel Roadh—Edward asks aid from the Clergy—Arrival of Sir J. Wogan—Calls a Parliament.

A. D. 1278. THE Irish who lived within the pale and those immediately on the borders, saw in the midst of these unhappy contentions, the superior advantages enjoyed by their new neighbours living under the English law, while they experienced the disadvantages of their own institutions; they had now given up all hopes of expelling the English, and became anxious to enjoy their rights and privileges, by exchanging the state of vassals and tributaries to the English monarch for that of English subjects; they applied therefore to de Ufford, and offered 8,000 marks for the free enjoyment of the English law. Edward was ready to comply with their wishes, and in answer to de Ufford, after desiring him to get as “high a fine of money as he could,” ordered him to take the opinion of the “Commons, Prelates and Nobles,” and with their consent grant this request to the Irish, on condition “that they should hold in readiness a body of good and stout footmen for one turn only, to repair to us when we shall think fit to demand them.” But the king’s desire was counteracted by those whose rapacity it would have restrained; an immediate compliance was promised, but every subterfuge and artifice were employed to prevent it.

A. D. 1280. The Irish renewed their application, and Edward issued a peremptory mandate for holding the assembly he had ordered to meet 2 years before; but again were the king’s intentions frustrated. This opposition to their reasonable demands, so irritated the

Irish, that they took up arms in several districts, where acting without union or order, they were soon put down. In Desmond, however, they formed a regular plan of opposition; secret assemblies were held by the Mac Cartys, and a prince, Daniel Roadh, elected, under whom they marched against the English, seized several castles, and drove their enemies from some of their settlements. Their neighbours, the O'Briens, were at the same time ready to draw the sword against each other on the usual subject, the succession to the sovereignty of the province; when Mac Carty passed secretly into Thomond, and shewed his countrymen that instead of contending among themselves, they should unite against the common enemy, who would by their own dissensions soon give them an opportunity of vindicating their native rights. By such representations Mac Carty succeeded in reconciling the hostile chiefs; and indeed the innumerable broils of the settlers unnoticed or at least unrestrained by the viceroys, seemed likely to offer the opportunity promised by Mac Carty.

Edward who had already obtained from the Irish clergy a 10th of their revenues, now demanded an additional 15th; the clergy appealed to the see of Rome, and humbly represented to the king their inability to comply with his demands; Edward next applied to the laity, who were more complying, and after some delay, granted a fifteenth of their effects. William de Vesey, now made chief governor, seemed well fitted for his post, but after some time he became involved in a quarrel with one of the Fitzgeralds, and was succeeded by Sir J. Wogan, who with temper and discretion unknown to his predecessors, eagerly laboured to compose the dissensions of the great lords by kindness and conciliation. He also summoned a parliament in a more regular manner than had yet been done, and from the acts of this assembly, it is easy to collect what

A. D.
1290.

A. D.
1295.

were then considered as irregularities and abuses. It enacted that the county of Dublin should be subdivided into Meath, Ulster, and Kildare, hitherto a liberty, and that each should have a sheriff; that the lords marchers should maintain necessary wards on pain of forfeiture; that tenants of every degree should provide according to their rank, towards a military establishment, and that absentees should assign a competent portion of their Irish revenues for this necessary purpose. That in cases of particular incursions of the natives, individual sufferers by wilful neglect of their neighbours, should be reimbursed by them; that no person of any degree should entertain more retainers or kerns, than he could himself maintain; in case of any violent depredation by such followers, their lords were to pay the damages, and the kern to be imprisoned until he found security for his good behaviour; that no partial truce should be made; that in case of sudden attack, the county or liberty attacked should rise in arms, till the enemy should be reduced or the chief governor interfere, and every lord was directed to repair and clear high-ways, path-ways, &c; that no Englishman should wear the garb of the Irish; and lastly, two lords were appointed to every county and liberty in which Irishmen resided, to make, in the absence of the English governor, such stipulations as might be necessary. These ordinances had at first some good effects, but when several of the English lords went to attend Edward in Scotland, old feuds were revived, and the country once more desolated in every direction.

EXERCISES.

What request did the Irish of the pale make? Why did they make this request? What was the king's answer? Were his orders executed? What was the consequence? What was the advice of Mac Carty to the rival chieftains of Thomond? What demands did Edward make on the clergy and laity? What was done by Sir J. Wogan? What was enacted by parliament? What effect had these ordinances?

RECAPITULATION.

Who succeeded Henry II. ? What interest did Richard take in Irish affairs ? What Irish chieftain was conspicuous in Richard's reign ? What was the conduct of Armoric of St. Lawrence ? What deputy was selected by John, whose connexions pointed him out as a desirable person to fill that office ? How was the weakness of the English power shewn during his administration ? What was the state of the English power in Ireland when Hamo de Valois succeeded earl Marshal in 1197 ? In what year did Roderic die ? In what year did Richard ? Did John on his accession attend to Ireland ? Why did he not ? What difficulty did Meyler Fitz Henry labour under when governor ? What examples occur about the year 1200 of the English barons mixing in the disputes of the Irish chieftains ? How was the deputy supported in reducing an English baron at the same period ? What surrender did Cathal make ? For what was de Courcey imprisoned ? What dispute occurred between John and pope Innocent III. relative to Ireland ? What loss did the citizens of Dublin suffer, and how was it replaced ? Why was John anxious to assemble a large army ? Under what pretence did he do it ? How did the de Lacys fall into disgrace ? In what year did John revisit Ireland ? How was he received by the Irish ? What regulations did he make for the pale ? How is it proved that the English power was well maintained under the bishop of Norwich ? When did John die ? What request was made from Ireland on the accession of Henry III. ? What grant did he make to his subjects in Ireland ? What was the conduct of the English barons in Ireland at this time ? On what terms did Donald O'Brien obtain a grant of Thomond ? What was the cause of contention between de Burgo and Phelim ? How did Phelim seek redress ? When did William earl Marshal die ? What is the history of his successor ? What was Henry's conduct to Phelim ? How did Phelim repay Henry's attention to him ? What was the conduct of the English barons with respect to the administration of justice in the pale ? How is the anxiety of the Irish chieftains to be governed by the English law shewn ? What means did Henry take to repress the disorders of this country ? On what occasion was Ireland granted to Prince Edward ? What was the nature of the grant ? Did he come to Ireland ? What was the consequence ? What occurred in Munster ? What in Connaught ? What regulation was made by the Irish clergy about 1250 ? What occasioned disputes between the clergy and laity ? When did Edward I. ascend the English throne ? How was the power of the Geraldines increased ? When did the Irish apply for the extension of the English law to them ? What did they offer for it ? What was Edward's answer ? What was the result ? When did they renew their application ? What was the issue ? What was the nature of Sir John Wogan's administration ? when was he appointed ? What laws were then made ? When did parliament begin to assemble with regularity ?

BOOK THE FOURTH.

CHAPTER I.

Gaveston appointed Chief Governor—Dispute between the Archbishops—Robert Bruce gains the battle of Bannockburn—Applied to by the Ulster chieftains—Proposal to his Brother—Edward lands—is defeated—Second attempt opposed by Earl of Ulster and Phelim—Phelim dethroned—Carrickfergus taken.

A. D. ON the death of his father, Edward II. succeeded to the throne, and appointed his unworthy favourite Gaveston, chief governor of Ireland.—**1307.** This selection of his favourite might have been useful to Ireland, if the bad qualities of Gaveston had not entirely overbalanced the advantages his influence gave him. Gaveston, on his arrival, put down all who attempted to insult his government; but the envy of the great lords, and his own insolence, threatened to interrupt his progress, when he was suddenly recalled. Sir John Wogan, his successor, was chiefly employed in holding assemblies, to ordain laws which the subject would not obey, and he could not enforce; and in hearing a dispute between the archbishops of Armagh and Dublin, whether a bishop should have his crosier borne erect or depressed in some particular districts.—The earl of Ulster and the Geraldines renewed their contests, when, after the defeat and capture of the Earl, the intermarriage of Maurice and Thomas Fitz John, afterwards heads of the houses of Desmond and Kildare, with the earl's daughters, effected a union between these families which promised some tranquility to the kingdom. But new enemies and new disorders broke in on its peace. Robert Bruce of Scotland had, by the victory

of Bannockburn, given to the Scots a hope of being able to free themselves from the yoke of Edward, who feebly kept what his father had won. The intelligence of this victory created great joy among the Irish, who considered themselves allied to the Scots: this joy was accompanied with feelings of regret, that they alone had not seized the opportunity, afforded by Edward's reign of indolence, for throwing off the yoke. The chieftains of Ulster therefore addressed themselves to Robert, represented their grievances and readiness to acknowledge as their sovereign any warrior who could rescue them from slavery. Robert advised his brother Edward to

lay hold of this offer, promising him such support
A. D. as would place him on the throne of Ireland—Ed-

1313. ward consented and landed on the Irish coast; he was however too precipitate, and failed, but did not abandon his enterprise; and on the 25th May 1315, landed again with 6000 Scots on the North-east coast—the Irish lords of Ulster flocked to his standard, and the united forces marched on without opposition, devastating the country and slaughtering the English settlers. Richard, earl of Ulster, rose with such forces as he could collect to defend his possessions. He was joined by Phelim O'Connor, Prince of Connaught; at the same time Butler, the lord deputy, collected the troops of Leinster and hastened to the earl, who haughtily declined his aid, and declaring himself a match for the Scots, advised the deputy to return to the seat of government. Bruce, notwithstanding the earl's promises, marched into Meath. Finding himself harrassed by the earl, he retreated, by the the advice of O'Nial of Tirowen, to Ulster. The Earl followed, and was defeated in a general battle fought near Coleraine; still he kept the field; and now Bruce began to tamper secretly with Phelim to detach him from Richard. While Phelim was absent from

Connaught, a kinsman, Roderick, endeavoured to supplant him, and applied to Bruce for aid, offering in return to support his claim to the throne of Ireland. Bruce readily accepted his services, at the same time he endeavoured to represent to him the folly of division, and advised him to suspend the discussion of all claims, until the common enemy was subdued; but without effect; Roderick persisted, and obliged the different septs to acknowledge his power.

In order to subdue his rival, Phelim now proposed to the earl to march into Connaught. Bruce was too strong to allow the earl to comply, but he dismissed the chieftain, who gave many assurances of return, to watch over his own interests. Phelim in his march, was pressed so severely by the northern Irish, ignorant of his secret understanding with Bruce, that on reaching a place of safety he found his followers so weakened and dispirited, he was obliged to dismiss them. He was soon followed by the earl, who was compelled to retire, by the superior force of the enemy. Bruce, prevented by famine from following this advantage, retreated into Ulster, where, unmolested, he assumed all the parade of royalty. On the arrival of the earl in Connaught, Phelim's partisans assembled with confidence; an engagement took place in which Roderick was defeated and slain. But no sooner was Phelim reinstated in his dignity and possessions, than he declared in favour of the Scottish interest, and turned his arms against his late allies: his example was followed by O'Brien of Thomond and other Irish chieftains of Munster and Meath. In the mean time, Bruce was crowned at Dundalk; to enable him to support his dignity, his brother Robert landed with a powerful army, but the famine which prevailed in Ireland obliged him to return before he could do any thing decisive. He left a body of forces with his brother, who

was further strengthened by several discontented Irish and English, among whom were the de Lacys, who flocked to his standard. The town of Carrickfergus, which had long resisted the Scottish troops, now surrendered, and Bruce leaving his exhausted quarters in Ulster, marched to the Southward.

EXERCISES.

Who was appointed governor by Edward II. ? What prevented his administration from being useful ? Who succeeded him ? How was he employed ? What intermarriage had influence in preserving the tranquillity of the kingdom ? How did the Irish receive the intelligence of Robert Bruce's success ? What did they do in consequence ? Who invaded Ireland ? With what success ? What force had he when he made his 2d attempt ? Who first opposed his progress ? How did the earl of Ulster receive the deputy's offer of assistance ? Who conquered in the battle of Coleraine ? What took place in Connaught ? What was Bruce's advice to Roderick ? What became of Phelim when he returned to Connaught ? Where did Bruce march to ? How did Phelim recover his throne ? How did Phelim act then ? What prevented Robert Bruce from staying in Ireland when he came to Edward's assistance ? What town surrendered to Bruce ?

CHAPTER II.

League to support king Edward—Phelim defeated—Bruce marches to Dublin—Ravages Kildare—Retreats to Ulster—King Edward's enemies excommunicated—Battle of Dundalk.

BRUCE's success at length roused the English lords ; becoming alarmed at the danger which threatened their own possessions, they entered into a league to support the interests of king Edward. To encourage this spirit of loyalty, some of the most deserving received marks of the royal favour. John Fitzthomas, baron of O'Phally, was created earl of Kildare, and Edmund Butler, earl of Carrick. While every possible exertion was making

to repel the Scots, an army was dispatched into Connaught, under William de Burgo, brother to the earl of Ulster, and Richard de Bermingham, to punish the desertion of Phelim O'Connor.

He advanced with spirit to meet his enemies. A battle was fought at Athenree, which was, after a desperate contest, gained by the English. Phelim, after losing many of his troops, was slain.

The loss of his ally did not prevent Bruce from marching to the very walls of Dublin, where his old antagonist, the earl of Ulster, lay a prisoner; he had been seized by the chief magistrate of that city, on his retiring to it before the Scotch army. He was suspected of disloyalty, on account of his former inactivity and his connection with Robert Bruce, who had married his sister, and all the influence of the English government could not obtain his release. The citizens of Dublin fired the suburbs of the town, and made such preparations for defence, that Bruce thought it advisable to turn aside into Kildare, which he devastated under the direction of Walter de Lacy, who had just before disavowed all connection with the invader, and had renewed his oath of allegiance to the English monarch. Traversing the territory of Ossory, they penetrated into Munster, and spread destruction and dismay over the country. It was with great difficulty that the government was enabled to stop the progress of Bruce; at length an army was collected at Kilkenny, consisting it is said, of 30,000 men, when Roger Mortimer of Wigmore, arrived as chief governor;—Bruce retraced his steps into Ulster, but the English forces were not able to follow him thro' a county completely exhausted; the new governor, therefore, dismissed his army, and convened the nobles in Dublin to deliberate on the state of affairs; with the assistance of this assembly he prevailed on the magis-

trates to release the earl of Ulster, and then proceeded into Meath, to compose the disorders of that district. The de Lacys were cited to answer a charge, of holding treasonable correspondence with the king's enemies, but instead of obeying the summons, they looked on it as an indignity, and slew the messenger who delivered it. Their lands were then ravaged and seized, and they themselves driven into Connaught.

The English interest seemed now prosperous, while the affairs of the invaders became every day more desperate; the Pope excommunicated all the enemies of King Edward, and Robert and Edward Bruce were excommunicated by name: the same sentence was denounced against all the Irish clergy, who had by their preaching excited their countrymen to insurrection. The clergy had foreseen this, and had the precaution to dispatch a remonstrance to Rome in the name of O'Nial, complaining that by the severity of their sufferings under the English government, they had been obliged to withdraw their allegiance from it, and invite another power to govern them.—this remonstrance was forwarded by the Pope to King Edward; meanwhile Bruce and his troops were in the greatest distress; disease and famine destroyed his men, who were reduced to feed on the dead bodies of their comrades.

In other parts of the kingdom where agriculture had not been interrupted, the return of a fruitful season brought relief to the English, who were enabled to resume their hostile operations. On the return of Mortimer to England, the archbishops of Armagh and Dublin had successively the chief management of affairs; the latter prelate assigned the command of the forces to Sir J. Bermingham, who marched into Ulster with several distinguished officers, and 1500 men. Bruce had still an army more than double that number, and

though weak and disordered, their leader still continued to prosecute his enterprise with unabated vigour; and so anxious was he to have the honor of deciding the contest by his own valour and skill, that he hastened his march on hearing that his brother Robert was about to join him.

A. D. 1318. The armies met at Dundalk; the Scots animated with a hope of putting an end to their distresses, the English impatient to exterminate invaders who had harrassed the whole nation. The archbishop of Armagh went through the ranks exhorting the troops to display their usual valour, distributing benedictions, and pronouncing absolution on all who should fall. In the conflict which followed, each side fought with determined bravery; the Scots received a total defeat. The body of Maupas, an English knight, who had rushed into the ranks to encounter Bruce, was found on that of his antagonist; Robert Bruce arrived only to hear of his brother's defeat, and then instantly retired. The death of Edward put an end to this invasion, rashly undertaken and wildly pursued, by which the people he came to govern, were plunged into distress of every kind.

In the reign of Edward II. which now drew to a close, the Irish parliamentary proceedings, as printed, begin. Of his reign, we have five laws passed in one session.

EXERCISES.

What effect had Bruce's success on the settlers? What means did the king take to encourage the settlers to resist Bruce? Who commanded the army sent against Phehim? Where did the two armies meet? What was the issue of the battle? What progress did Bruce make? Why was the earl of Ulster imprisoned? Who joined Bruce before Dublin? Where was the army collected that stopped Bruce? Who arrived as chief governor? What steps did he take? What part did the Pope take during this invasion? What was the state of Bruce's army after retreating into Ulster? What enabled the English to reassemble their army? Who commanded the English troops? Where did the armies meet, and what was the issue?

CHAPTER III.

Attempts to establish an University—King writes to the refractory barons—Desmond offended by La Poer—Disturbances in Leinster—Roger Outlaw, chief governor—Irish of the Pale apply for English laws.

FROM the overgrown power of the English nobles, settled in Ireland, their contempt of a government too weak to control them, the number and the vices of their retainers, and the contentions for power and possessions, the kingdom was filled with crimes and disorders of every kind.

A. D. To remedy this state of things, some prelates
1320. were labouring with zeal to establish an university for the study of theology, and of civil and canon law; and archbishop Bricknor modelled and formed an academical body, which conferred degrees.

This seminary was aided by Edward III. in 1358; he enlarged the original endowment, and by special writ granted his protection and safe-conduct to the students of this institution; nevertheless this valuable attempt for the cultivation of letters was defeated by the scenes of anarchy and confusion which followed.

A. D. On the accession of Edward III. the English and
1327. Irish chieftains were pursuing their own ambitious objects without paying any regard to the authority of the king or his viceroy.

Thomas Fitz John, earl of Kildare, then Lord Justice, represented to the king, the distress to which he was exposed in his administration by the insolence of some distinguished subjects who paid no respect to his authority. This produced a letter from the king to Maurice of Desmond, the earl of Louth, James Butler, Maurice

Rochford, and John de la Poer, enjoining them on their allegiance, and at their peril, to obey the governor, and assist him in preserving the peace and interest of the crown. But Maurice of Desmond was not to be prevented by a royal mandate from avenging in the field a personal insult he had received from de la Poer, who had called him *the Rymex*. Kildare interposed in vain; the parties armed, and de la Poer was defeated, driven out of the kingdom, and his lands exposed to the vindictive rage of the conqueror. The king commanded Maurice and his associates, Butler and Bermingham, on pain of forfeiture, to lay down their arms; alarmed at this threat, they complied, but not before they had encouraged the old septs of Leinster, under one of the family of Mac Murchad, to rise against a divided people; they insulted the government, and were not defeated until they had reached the neighbourhood of Dublin. Immediately after, Kildare died, and the government was transferred to Roger Outlaw, prior of Kilmainham. The new governor effected a reconciliation between de Burgo, de la Poer, the Geraldines, and the Berminghams, which added considerably to the strength of the government, and also intimidated the septs of Leinster.

The Irish of the pale took the opportunity, afforded by the tranquillity which followed the union of the English lords, to seek once more from the throne, a participation in the English laws, without obliging individuals to sue for special charters.

Their petition was referred to the chief governor Darcy, to be referred to the Irish Parliament, where it met with the usual fate.

A well concerted insurrection now broke out, under O'Brien of Thomond. From Leinster, the flames of war spread into Meath and Munster, and while it raged, dreadful excesses were committed: among the rest a

priest was murdered, and his church and congregation reduced to ashes.

The horror produced by such terrible destruction roused those most exposed, to a desperate defence. The citizens of Wexford repelled the enemy with considerable loss. James Butler, lately created earl of Ormond, actively defended his own territories; the lord Justice Darcy took the field, but his forces were unable to cope with the Irish, and he was obliged to call to his aid Maurice of Desmond, with whom he treated as an ally, and who was now become so necessary to the support of government, that he was created earl of Desmond, and obtained a confirmation of his royal liberties in Kerry. The earl of Ormond in the same year obtained a similar grant of liberties, and converted his royal domains into a county palatinate. This made the ninth of those mischievous grants; Carlow, Wexford, Kilkenny, Kildare, and Leix, the portions of the five co-heiresses of the family of earl Marshal, and those of Meath, Ulster, Desmond, and Ormond. These absolute palatines had the privilege of making barons and knights; held criminal and civil courts, and made their own judges, sheriffs, and other officers; so that the king's writs did not run in those countries, which now occupied more than two parts of the English pale. Many evils followed from this creation of numbers of rival independent chiefs, whose interest it was that the government to which they owed allegiance, should be weak and distressed.

EXERCISES.

By what means did the Prelates endeavour to improve the people? Were their attempts successful? What aid was given by Edward III? What was the state of the pale on the accession of Edward III.? What offence was given to Maurice of Desmond? By whom?

What was the consequence? What did the Irish of the pale do on the restoration of tranquillity? What was the fate of their application? Under whom did the Irish now attack the English? Who first repulsed them? On whom did the deputy call for assistance? What return was made to Desmond for his support? What was the nature of a county palatine? How many were now made? What was the effect of these grants.

CHAPTER IV.

Sir Anthony Lucy seizes several English Lords—Edward proposes to visit Ireland—Earl of Ulster murdered—Measures taken by Edward against the English settlers—Earl of Desmond calls a parliament at Kilkenny—Remonstrance to the king—His answer.

SIR Anthony Lucy, who was now chief governor, suspected from the little progress which was made in repressing O'Brien, that he was secretly abetted by some of the English lords, and having obtained sufficient evidence of the fact, seized on the earl of Desmond, Mandeville, de Burgo, and his brother, with Walter and William Bermingham, the latter of whom was condemned and executed. Several circumstances combined to enable the governor to act this spirited and impartial part. Edward, in order to obtain supplies for prosecuting his projected invasion of Scotland, was now amusing his parliament with proposals of visiting Ireland, and bringing the whole of it into subjection to the English throne. Several salutary ordinances were transmitted for the more regular and effectual execution of the English laws; Edward next resumed all the grants made in his reign, during the power of Mortimer, and soon after ordered the attendance in England, of the Earls of Ulster and Ormond, Sir William and Sir Walter de Burgo, and all the Barons of the realm of England, who held lands in

Ireland, to advise him on his voyage, and accompany him to Ireland. An order was issued to seize and send to Holy-head all ships in the Irish ports; and another for impressing a body of Welsh infantry; and all officers were ordered to their posts in Ireland. But at length Edward discovered his real object, and marched into Scotland. Nothing more was done for his Irish interests than could be effected by precarious treaties, which discovered to his enemies *their* power, but added no security to *his* government.

An event now occurred which filled the kingdom with consternation, and involved it in fresh commotions. The earl of Ulster was murdered at Carrickfergus by his own servants: the Countess fled into England with her infant daughter, and left her immense possessions without defence. By the law of England, the late earl's lands should have been taken into the king's protection; but the O'Nials did not acknowledge this law, and seizing so favourable an opportunity of regaining their ancient possessions, suddenly passed the Bann in arms, fell furiously on the settlers, who were, after a desperate resistance, nearly exterminated. Two of the most powerful of the younger branches of the de Burgo family, obtained possession of the late earl's lands in Connaught; and knowing that the law of England would defend the claim of the young heiress, they rejected the English law, renounced their own names, adopted the language, manners, and apparel of the Irish, and thenceforward transmitted their possessions in the course of Tainistry and gavel kind.

These commotions and successes encouraged others, and while the governor had to watch the open enemy in the field, he had also to guard against a number of secret enemies of the English race; he seized and confined two of the house of de la Poer: Nicholas Fitzmaurice, of

Kerry was made prisoner by Desmond, while Kildare chastised those who disturbed the peace of Leinster. In the mean time, the measures of Edward served to inflame the discontents of the English lords: obliged to seek every where for money to supply his wants, he had applied to Ireland. and on being disappointed, resolved on the most violent and offensive measures against his subjects there. He declared void all suspensions or remissions of debts due to the crown, either in his own or in his predecessors time, except such as had the sanction of the great seal; he resumed all grants made not only by himself but by his father; he dismissed the justices of the king's bench, and common-pleas, Mountpesson, and Baggot, and obliged the treasurer of the exchequer, who claimed a privilege of disposing of small sums without vouchers, to account from the commencement of his reign.

But the act most offensive and unjust, was an ordinance, enjoining, that all who were in the king's service in Ireland, and had not possessions in England, should be immediately removed from their offices; among the descendants of the old English settlers, this act of Edwards produced a most formidable combination; insulted and injured, they made common cause, and the governor, dreading some violent measures, summoned a parliament to meet in Dublin. He had, however, soon the mortification to find that Desmond, supported by Kildare, had convened a most numerous and respectable assembly at Kilkenny, who stiled themselves the prelates, nobles and commons, of the land. They prepared a remonstrance to the king, in which they urged in the strongest manner the irregularities in the administration, and the grievances which had for some time inflamed the public mind. The king's answer was gracious and condescending; he made good former grants, and allowed the pardons for

debts to be valid, until the causes for those pardons should be tried. The ferment in Ireland was not however allayed; dissensions multiplied between the descendants of the old settlers, and those English who had lately come into Ireland. The natives took advantage of those dissensions and harrassed the pale in every direction.

EXERCISES.

What suspicions did Sir Anthony Lucy entertain of the English Barons? How did he act? What enabled the governor at this time to act so spirited a part? What means were taken to secure the peace of the pale, when Edward instead of going to Ireland, marched into Scotland? What nobleman was murdered in Ulster? What became of his property? What conduct did Edward pursue towards Ireland? Which of his ordinances was the most offensive and unjust? How did the Settlers act on its being made? What did the governor do? What was the result of the assembly at Kilkenny? What was the king's answer to the remonstrance? How did the Irish act during these dissensions?

CHAPTER V.

Sir Ralph de Ufford, Governor—Desmond Summonses an assembly at Callan—Is forced to submit—Earl of Kildare Imprisoned—Desmond seeks redress from Edward—His Success—Earl of Kildare Knighted—Ordinances against the degeneracy of the English—Lionel sent into Ireland—State of Parties—Lionel's Difficulties.

SIR Ralph de Ufford, a man of spirit and activity, was now entrusted with the chief power in Ireland. On his arrival he took active steps to repress the inroads of the Irish; and then turned his attention to the discontented English; Desmond was summoned to attend a parlia-

ment in Dublin; the earl proudly slighted the mandate and called an assembly of his own at Callan. Sir Ralph issued a proclamation, declaring this assembly unlawful, and forbidding the nobles and commons to attend it; and then collecting his troops, marched into Munster, and forced the refractory earl to submit.

The earl of Kildare was next attacked, taken, and imprisoned, to the great astonishment and terror of those of the English race, who had so often insulted government with impunity. The death of Ufford soon deprived the country of a governor, whose integrity and spirit would have essentially served its interests, and the government passed into the hands of Sir John Morris, who released Kildare from prison. In consequence of an insurrection in Ulster, Morris was removed to make way for Roger Darcy, and Walter de Bermingham was soon substituted for him. Desmond took this opportunity of remonstrating against the wrongs which he alleged he had received from Ufford; he was warmly seconded by Bermingham. Edward was then about to embark for France; he received the earl in the most gracious manner, promised to restore his lands, and took him to the continent; Kildare was encouraged by the earl's success to take the same part, and he was so distinguished at the siege of Calais, that he received the honor of knighthood from the king's hand. By some judicious enactments, and the favor shewn the earl of Desmond, the peace of the English territories was for some time preserved, and the deputies had leisure to summon parliament, and devise means for correcting abuses.

A. D. Sir Thomas Rokeby, governed with an equity and integrity unknown to many of his predecessors; the Irish, however, became so troublesome, that Edward was induced to make Desmond chief go-

vernor. His connections and dependencies gave him considerable advantages in the present state of affairs, but his death soon restored the administration to A. D. Rokeby; his power was confined to procuring 1356. useful ordinances, directed chiefly against the degeneracy of the old English; appeal to the English parliament was declared unnecessary, and was referred to the Irish parliament. Another ordinance prohibited the non residence of incumbents; and now the Irish parliaments were regulated according to the constitution of England. But while the royal authority was applying a remedy to one disorder, others broke out too powerful to be restrained by a weak government; and the quarrels of the English, together with the inroads of the Irish, covered the country with desolation. Edward accustomed to success and glory, grew impatient at this scene, and determined to take some vigorous means of subduing his Irish, and reforming his English subjects. His second son, Lionel, had been in his youth affianced to the daughter of the late earl of Ulster, and claimed the earldom and lordship of Connaught in her right. Edward, therefore, consulting both the interests of his A. D. Irish dominions and his son's, sent him with 1500 1361. men, into Ireland—he was attended by Ralph, earl of Stafford, James, earl of Ormond, sir John Carew, and sir William Windsore. With such a force, and judicious management, Lionel might have realized his father's expectations, but his first act shewed how unfit he was to hold the reins of government. Two parties had lately grown up in the country, one formed of those who were English by birth, another, of those who were English by descent. The contentions of these two parties added in no small degree to the distractions of the country, and their jealousies prevented that union which

would have strengthened the government of the different deputies.

Lionel, surrounded by the faction of English by birth, listened to their suggestions, and forbade by proclamation all the old settlers, or any of the king's subjects of Irish birth to approach the camp. The insulted party thus thrown off, the prince advanced against O'Brien without guides or intelligence, and advised by men utterly unacquainted with the nature of the service they were on. The enemy hovered about his camp, suddenly disappeared, and again renewed their attacks; an advanced party was surprised and suffered great loss, and many deserted to the enemy; the prince was obliged to change his conduct; the old settlers were invited to his standard, while his father issued a proclamation, stating the distress of the prince, now created the duke of Clarence, and ordering all those nobles of the English race who had not obeyed his first order, to repair immediately to Ireland on pain of forfeiture.

EXERCISES.

Who was appointed deputy? To what did he turn his attention? What was the conduct of Desmond? How did Ufford act then? Who was next attacked? What opportunity did Desmond take of applying for redress? What reception did he meet with from Edward? Who followed his example? In what manner did Sir Thomas Rokeby govern? Why was he removed? When was he restored? What ordinances were enacted during his administration? What means did Edward take to subdue the Irish and reform the settlers? What was the first act of Lionel? Which were the two parties then among the English? What was the consequence of his conduct? What order did the king make to afford him assistance?

CHAPTER VI.

Clarence recalled—Returns to Ireland—Statute of Kilkenny—Sir William Windsores's Administration.

By the assistance of the old settlers who crowded to his standard, the duke gained many advantages over the enemy; after some successful expeditions, he returned to the seat of government, and such favorable opinions were entertained of his administration, that the king's subjects, both clergy and laity, granted him two years value of their revenues to defray the expenses of the war. The duke, however, was soon recalled, and left Ireland in a state of dissension. English by birth, and English by descent, were become terms of odious distinction, and produced violences, which called for a mandate from the king, commanding that no English subject, born in England or Ireland, should use opprobrious language, under a penalty of two years imprisonment.

A. D. Clarence was succeeded by the earl of Ormond,
1364 who again, resigned to the Duke; and he as suddenly left the administration to sir Thomas Dale, an English knight of too little consequence to suppress the dissensions of the English, much less to unite them in any service of moment.

A. D. Clarence was again sent over to stem by his au-
1367. thority the torrent of corruption and disorder, and knowing from experience the necessity of reforming the English settlers, applied himself to this object with energy. A parliament was summoned to meet at Kilkenny, and was more numerous and respectably attended than any convened in Ireland: the prelates of Dublin, Cashel, Tuam, Lismore, Waterford, Killaloe, Ossory, Leighlin and Cloyne, attended; both estates sat

together, and the result of their deliberations, was the famous statute of Kilkenny. It was by this enacted, that marriage, nurture of infants, and gossiping with the Irish, should be considered high treason—also, that any man of English race who should use an Irish name, or the Irish language, or apparel, or any Irish custom, should forfeit his lands, until he gave security to conform to the English manners. The Brehon law was pronounced to be a pernicious custom, lately introduced among the English subjects—the English were expressly prohibited from making war on the Irish without special warrant from the state—it was made highly penal to the English to permit the Irish to graze their lands, present them to benefices, or to entertain their bards, or news-tellers—it was made felony to impose or cess any forces on the English subject against his will—express power was given to the king's sheriffs to enter into all franchises, and there to apprehend all felons or traitors.

This statute, together with the severe discipline enforced by Clarence, had some effect in reforming the old English—This appeared from the improvement in the revenues, and the suspension of petty hostilities among the nobles. Still, however, the administration had not sufficient strength to strike a lasting awe into the proud and turbulent; and on the young earl of Desmond's succeeding the royal duke, the state was again embroiled by the feuds of the families of Bermingham, which the chief governor was unable to suppress, and was at length reduced to treat with those disturbers as with a foreign power. The Irish chieftains of Thomond and Connaught formed a confederacy which threatened considerable dangers. This alarming prospect produced an order from the king, that all who absented themselves from their Irish lands should return. A parliament was summoned to deliberate on the measures most effectual for

the security of the king's Irish dominions, and sir William Windsore, who had served under Clarence, was appointed the king's lieutenant. In the parliament which he convened at Kilkenny, a subsidy of three thousand pounds was granted, and one of two thousands in a following session, to carry on the war against the Irish. But while this assembly was thus providing, the forces of O'Brien and O'Connor were in the field without an army to oppose them. The earl of Desmond was the first to oppose their progress; his inferior numbers, however, were soon defeated, and he himself was slain; and when Windsore at length took the field; he was unable to find the enemy who had retreated to haunts inaccessible to their opponent. The governor was now reduced to the expedient of employing some of the Irish to act against the rest, and several were engaged and paid to watch the motions of their countrymen.

EXERCISES.

How did the people show their sense of the duke's services? What was the state of the pale after the departure of the duke of Clarence? What measures did Clarence take on his return to Ireland? How was the meeting at Kilkenny attended? What were the provisions of that statute? What effect had it? How did this appear? Who was appointed governor after Clarence? What grants did parliament make under him? What took place while this parliament was sitting? How did Windsore act against the Irish?

CHAPTER VII.

Opinions in England of Irish affairs—Nicholas Dagworth sent into Ireland—Irish members summoned to the English parliament.

WINDSORE was now removed: to him succeeded the Earl of Kildare, and to him sir Robert Ashton. At

this time the tumults in Ireland were so magnified in England, that sir Richard Pembridge refused to execute the commission of chief governor. The administration therefore of Irish affairs was again assigned to sir William Windsore, who was allowed to dictate the terms on which he would accept the office. Much was expected from this governor, but he was not able to do more for the security of the English settlements, than to hire some of the Irish Chieftains to oppose their countrymen : but whenever the stipulated price was delayed, they rose in arms to exact payment. The same system was pursued under the earl of Ormond who succeeded Windsore. The English parliament, dissatisfied at being obliged to support the king's Irish dominions, solicited that enquiry should be made into the deficiencies of the royal revenues in Ireland; the king too, was impatient at finding any part of his supplies diverted into such a channel from his military services.

A. D. Nicholas Dagworth was therefore dispatched to Ireland, to state the king's necessities, and the 1376. deficiencies in the Irish revenue, and to have a parliament convened for the purpose of granting a liberal subsidy. The parliament met, pleaded poverty, and refused. Edward was provoked, and issued writs of summons to both clergy and laity; the bishops were commanded to send two of the clergy from each diocese, the commons, two laymen from each county, the cities, two citizens, to the king in England, to treat, consult and agree with him and his council, as well on the government of the land of Ireland, as on the aid and support of the king's war.

The archbishop of Armagh and the county of Dublin, in their answers declared that, " they were not bound to send persons into England to attend parliaments;" however they complied out of respect to the king and his

necessities, but gave their deputies no power to accede to the grants of any subsidy ; this restriction produced another controversy. The result of this extraordinary dispute is not exactly known, but it appears that the representatives from Ireland, sat at Westminster, and that their wages were levied off the respective places which had elected them. Edward died in 1377.

EXERCISES.

What was the opinion in England of the state of affairs in Ireland ? What instance is given of this opinion ? What steps did Sir William Windsore take to secure the English settlements ? Who succeeded Windsore ? What was the English parliament dissatisfied at ? What was done in consequence ? What was the conduct of the Irish parliament ? What steps did the king then take ? What is known concerning the parliament summoned to England ? When did Edward die ?

RECAPITULATION.

In what year did Edward II. succeed to the throne ? Who was appointed chief governor by him ? What was his character ? What impressions did the progress of the Scottish arms make in Ireland ? What effect did these impressions produce ? When did Edward Bruce land ? What are the principal circumstances of that invasion and how did it terminate ? What was the conduct of the Prince of Connaught during that invasion ? What part did the Pope take ? What distressed Bruce besides the English forces ? With respect to acts of parliament, what is remarkable of this reign ? What steps were taken by the prelates to remedy the disorders of those times ? When did Edward III. ascend the throne ? What was the state of parties then, and what was the insult offered to Desmond ? The Irish of the pale made a request at this time, what was it ? What was the result ? What reward did Desmond receive, and what effect had it and similar grants on the country ? How did Sir A. Lucy act towards the English lords ? What circumstances enabled him to act so ? What nobleman was murdered in Ulster ? What was the consequence ? The king applied to his English subjects in Ireland for aid, what success did his application meet, and what was the king's conduct afterwards ? What consequences did the king's conduct produce ? What answer was given to the remonstrance from the assembly at Kilkenny What

was the conduct of Desmond during the administration of Ufford? What occurred on Desmond's application to the king? What regulations were made during the administration of Rokeby in 1356? In what year did Edward send over his son Lionel, and why? What parties then prevailed in the Pale? How did Lionel act towards those parties? What was the result of this conduct? When was the statute of Kilkenny passed? What were the provisions of it? What effect had it? Who was Sir Richard Pembridge, and how is his name connected with the state of Ireland? What measures did Sir William Windsore take on his reappointment to preserve the public peace? In what year was Nicholas Dagworth sent into Ireland and on what occasion? Where was an Irish parliament summoned to on his return?

BOOK THE FIFTH.

CHAPTER I.

Complaints of the English parliaments—Of the Irish subjects—Sir Nicholas Dagworth sent to inspect the revenue—Richard II. lands at Waterford.

A. D. THE accession of Richard II. made no alteration in the affairs of Ireland; in the remote districts, hostilities were renewed or suspended, as the interests of parties directed, and the royal territories were confined within very narrow bounds; the English parliament continued to express their uneasiness at the expense attending the maintenance of the king's Irish dominions; on the other hand, the subjects of Ireland complained of the number of the nobility and gentry, who abandoned their Irish lands, and left the residents unequal to the charge necessary for the public cause. A law was in consequence passed, inflicting heavy penalties on absentees; at the same time the king gave a liberty to his Irish subjects

1377.

1379.

to work mines, paying him a ninth, to coin money, and to hold a free trade with Portugal. As the English treasury was now greatly exhausted, while the exigencies of the state required supplies, Sir Nicholas Dagworth was sent to Ireland to survey the possessions of the crown, and to enquire into the conduct of the king's officers, to whom the revenue was entrusted. To add dignity to the administration, Edmund Mortimer, Earl of Marche and Ulster, son to Lionel, Duke of Clarence, was appointed vice-gerent, and on his death, the same dignity was conferred on his young son, Roger, and the government administered by his uncle, Thomas Mortimer, as lord deputy. The Irish coasts were so infested by the galleys of France and Spain, that the English navy was called out to oppose them: the hostile fleets met in the harbour of Kinsale, and the French and Spaniards were defeated. Notwithstanding this benefit, the Irish parliament did not grant any considerable supply, and the young vice-gerent was recalled, to make room for Philip de Courtney, who was invested with great powers, and had a patent to hold his office for ten years; but his violence and oppression were so great that he was not only superseded, but arrested to answer the charges made against him. Richard II. now gave an extraordinary proof of his weakness and folly; he created his favourite the earl of Oxford, marquis of Dublin, and by the same patent granted to him the entire dominion of Ireland, to be held of the crown by liege homage, excepting those lands and cities, formerly reserved to the crown, and those hereditary to the nobles and barons of Ireland; for which the earl was bound, as soon as he could complete the conquest of Ireland, to pay into the English exchequer, 5000 marks annually during his life. In every other particular he had the entire government, with power to appoint all of-

ficers of state and justice ; the English parliament, anxious perhaps to separate this favorite from the king, confirmed the grant, and gave the marquis a debt of 30,000 marks, due by the king of France, provided he went into Ireland, and suppressed the insurrections which raged in many of the English counties. Five hundred men at arms, and one thousand archers, were granted to him for the conquest for two years ; great expectations were formed from the presence of a nobleman so dignified and attended. The king accompanied him into Wales on his journey ; but when about to part from him, found his affection was too strong to bear a separation, and the marquis returned to London, leaving the government of Ireland to his deputies. The favorite was, however, A. D. soon banished by the nobility of England, his grants revoked, and the government entrusted to 1388. sir John Stanley first, afterwards to the earl of Ormond, who acted with vigour and some success. O'Nial surrendered himself to Stanley, and consented to restore the duties he received from Ulster, to the family of the earl of Ulster ; Ormond was chiefly employed in the south, and gained a victory of some consequence near Kilkenny. Notwithstanding these partial successes, the country was still a prey to all the evils of war, and the subsidies demanded from the English parliament for the use of Ireland, produced continual remonstrances. Gloucester, the king's uncle, offered to repair in person to Ireland, and labour for its general pacification ; the offer was accepted, some forces were prepared, and the duke was ready to embark, when his nephew countermanded his departure, apprehensive perhaps, of the danger arising from a powerful and popular prince, invested with high authority, and commanding a considerable force.

The king now determined to go in person ; prepara-

tions were made accordingly; sir Thomas Scroop was sent to prepare for his reception; and in the month of A. D. October, Richard landed at Waterford with 4000 men at arms, and 30,000 archers, attended by 1394. the duke of Gloucester, the earls of Nottingham and Rutland; Thomas lord Piercy, and other distinguished personages.

EXERCISES.

What effect had the accession of Richard II. on Irish affairs? What law was passed in 1379? What liberties did he grant to his Irish subjects? Why was Nicholas Dagworth sent into Ireland? What naval engagement took place? What mark of favour did the king shew the Earl of Oxford? What grants did the parliament make to him? What was the issue of his appointment? Who offered to come over as chief governor? Why was he prevented? When did the king arrive?

CHAP. II.

Transactions after Richard's Arrival—His departure—Death of Earl Marche—Richard's Return—Accession of Henry IV.

ATTENDED as Richard now was, with a force sufficient to ensure obedience, much might have been done, had the king any idea of what system of policy he ought to have acted on towards Ireland. instead, however, of adopting any means which might have laid the foundation of lasting peace, by assimilating the whole body of the people; he contented himself with the ceremonial, of receiving homage from those who knew it was not in their power to resist. Seventy-five Irish chieftains, each a despot in his own dominions, made their submissions. The king entertained them with great magnificence, and

offered to confer the honor of knighthood on O'Nial, O'Connor, O'Brien, and Mac Murchad, who at first refused, not conceiving that it could be any accession of dignity to them—the only stipulation of any consequence made, was with the Irish of Leinster, who bound themselves to evacuate the province. After a residence of nine months, Richard departed, leaving Roger Mortimer, earl of Marche, vice-gerent; the stipulations with respect to Leinster, now came to be enforced, the royal army was, however, gone, and the requisitions of government treated with contempt. During the hostilities which ensued, the earl of Marche fell in the county

A. D. Wicklow, and his army was defeated by the
1398. Byrnes. Richard, determined to avenge his

A. D. death, made preparations for a second expedi-
1399. tion, and landed at Waterford, on the 13th of
May; six days were spent in Waterford, fourteen

in Kilkenny, waiting the arrival of the duke of Aumerle, who was to follow with reinforcements. Richard at length marched against Ar. Mac Murchad, who retreated to his woods on the enemies approach, and completely foiled all his attempts. Richard after receiving the submissions of some other chieftajns, was forced to retreat. Mac Murchad thought this was a favourable opportunity for making terms, and proposed a conference, in which he was met by the duke of Gloucester; but Mac Murchad refusing to be bound by any conditions, though he consented to submit, the conference was broken off; the English monarch vowed, never to depart from Ireland until he was in possession of Mac Murchad, dead or alive; but having after a stay of six weeks in Dublin, received intelligence of his having been dethroned, he departed. No acts of parliament of his reign, are to be found in the statute book.

A. D. The accession of Henry IV. laid the foundation of the bloody contests between the houses of York and Lancaster ; these were severely felt in Ireland, and for many years interfered with the improvement of the country. Under the administration of Stanley and Scroop, disorders multiplied, and the archbishop of Armagh was sent by an Irish parliament to lay the state of the country before the king. This prelate was graciously received, and Henry's second son, Thomas, duke of Lancaster, was sent into Ireland as vice-gerent. On Henry's accession, the Scots had declared war against him, and now made several descents on the Irish coasts, led by Donald of the Isles, and his brother John, and defeated a fleet fitted out by the citizens of Dublin.

A. D. The arrival of the duke of Lancaster, accompanied by a strong force, promised some tranquillity ; 1402. several wholesome and equitable regulations were made ; many chieftains renewed their submissions, and a parliament was convened at Castledermot, to devise means for repelling the Scottish invaders. The county of Dublin granted a subsidy, troops were collected, and the war carried to the coasts of Scotland. Mean time

A. D. the duke of Lancaster returned to England, and Mac Murchad bid defiance to the deputy Scroop. 1407.

A parliament assembled at Dublin, and thence adjourned to Trim to concert measures for restraining him : the deputy, aided by Ormond and Desmond, marched against him, and he was defeated after a well disputed battle. He was not reduced when the victors were called off to another quarter.

A. D. The duke of Lancaster now returned to Ireland, armed with additional powers, but except reducing the earl of Kildare, whose allegiance was impeached, did nothing remarkable. After having been

defeated and wounded under the walls of Dublin, he returned to England, leaving as his deputy, Butler, the prior of St. John of Jerusalem.

The power of the Irish was now so great, that the English were obliged to pay an annual stipend, afterwards called black-rent, to purchase the protection of the Irish chieftains. None of the acts passed in the reign of Henry IV. are in the statute book.

EXERCISES.

What was the king's conduct on his arrival? On whom did he offer to confer knighthood? What stipulation of consequence was made? Where was the earl of Marche killed? What means did Richard take of avenging his death? What took place after his arrival? What vow did the king make respecting Mac Murchad? How was the foundation laid of the feuds between the houses of York and Lancaster? What effect had they on Ireland? How did the Scots act towards Ireland? What occurred after the arrival of the duke of Lancaster? Who assisted the deputy against Mac Murchad? What proves the weakness of the English government in Ireland at this period?

CHAPTER III.

Parliament refuses to grant supplies.—State of the English settlers—Parliament petitions the king—Bishop of Meath appointed deputy.

A. D. 1413. DURING the reign of Henry V. little attention was paid to Ireland by a monarch whose ambition and love of glory were entirely occupied by his continental wars. Sir John Stanley was again appointed to the chief command, to the utter dissatisfaction of those he was to govern; but an end was soon put to his rapacity by his death. The Irish council appointed Crawly, archbishop of Dublin, to succeed him; but though pi-

ous and learned, he was not qualified either by his profession or temper to govern a turbulent people.

Parliament refused to grant supplies, though the enemy was in arms, and the kingdom seemed ready to sink under the calamities of war and faction, when sir John Talbot, lord Furnival, a man distinguished by his military talents, was sent from England to assume the reins of government. Sir John, unaccompanied by any force, was obliged to rely on his own exertions for raising troops in Ireland, but he acted with so much vigour, that he struck terror into the Irish chieftains, and even Mac Murchad was forced to give hostages for his peaceable conduct.

But Furnival, though he defended the pale, gave little satisfaction in other respects, and the exactions for the support of the soldiery were as severe as under the government of any of his predecessors. The descendants of the old English settlers were now reduced to a most mortifying condition; they were looked upon by the native Irish, as aliens and intruders, and by their fellow subjects in England, who formed their opinions from magnified reports of their degeneracy, with horror and contempt. Many of the most profligate of the Irish had passed into England to seek relief for their wants or refuge for their offences, and from these outcasts a judgement was formed of the whole race. In the beginning of the present reign, the English parliament had enacted, that all such should be obliged to depart; and to such an unjustifiable extent was the execution of this law carried, that students, though expressly exempted in the statute, were excluded from the inns of court. Those who were sent from England to the government or to any office of trust or confidence, came full of those prejudices, and consequently were tempted to exercise their authority with insolence. The old English race

were thus irritated to the utmost, and in the 4th of Henry V. a parliament was convened at Dublin, to lay all their grievances before the throne ; but Merbury, the chancellor, refusing to affix the great seal, the petition could not be transmitted.

A. D. 1417. Furnival was removed, and was succeeded by the earl of Ormond, whose appointment to the vicegerency was peculiarly acceptable to his countrymen of the English race. A subsidy was granted in parliament of 1000 marks, accompanied with a representation of grievances. The petition to the throne was now revived, and passed through the proper forms ; the archbishop of Armagh, and sir Christopher Preston, were appointed to present this petition, in which the king's personal appearance in Ireland is entreated, and a pathetic representation made of the distresses of his subjects there, harrassed on the one hand, by the injustice and extortion of his majesty's ministers, and on the other by the incursions of the Irish, whose conduct they beseech his highness to lay before the pope, and to prevail on the holy father to publish a crusade against them. The petition further prayed, that Merbury might be cited before the king, to answer for his former insolent opposition to them, and represents the unreasonable exclusion of their students from the inns of court, and the number of absentees ; and also prays that their commerce might be defended, and their coin regulated ; but above all they urgently entreat that commissioners may be appointed to inspect the conduct of officers sent into Ireland. Though it does not appear what particular attention was paid to this petition, there is reason to suppose that the complaints of his Irish subjects were not entirely unnoticed by the king ; for soon after Merbury was removed and Fitzthomas, prior of the hospital of St. John of Je-

rusalem, substituted for him. The Earl of Ormond was continued in his administration ; but while he defended the pale, the security enjoyed gave rise to internal divisions between the parties of English by birth, and English by descent.

A. D. Henry V. died and was succeeded by his infant son. No acts passed in his reign are in the Irish
1422. statute book.

A. D. While the Irish in different quarters attacked the English pale, a parliament convened at Trim,
1423. under the archbishop of Dublin, could vote no more than 60 archers, and 12 men at arms for 40 days ; and while their borders were thus infested, the English by descent found leisure to pursue Merbury with all the virulence of party spirit.

To repel the enemy and put an end to those civil dissensions, the English regency thought it sufficient to use the name of Edmund earl of Marche and Ulster, who disdaining to do the duty in person, deputed the bishop of Meath to govern in his absence. This prelate's rank, and his being English by birth, provoked the nobles, who, when assembled in council, observed that his commission was sealed with a private seal ; the archbishop of Dublin protested against the mode of his appointment, and refused to administer the oaths. After a long discussion, however, he was received, to prevent the inconvenience which might arise from the suspension of government. Such was the violence of party, that the bishop was a little after maliciously accused of stealing a chalice.

A. D. This prelate summoned a parliament, which,
1423. among other provisions, voted a continuance of the pension of 80 marks a year to Gerald Kavenagh, successor to Mac Murchad, for his services in keeping the peace. The bishop was succeeded by the earl of Ormond ; he seems to have been appointed for the

purpose of suppressing some commotions in the north : several parties from Scotland had passed into Ulster, where they were retained by the Irish Chieftains, whom they assisted in ravaging the English settlements. The earl of Marche and Ulster now found it necessary to repair to Ireland to defend his own lands from those inroads, but died suddenly at Trim.

Talbot, lord Furnival, was appointed to succeed him as lord justice, and soon after the earl of Ormond was made lord lieutenant. Nothing remarkable is known of the administration of these two noblemen : it is however certain, that their operations intimidated the Irish chieftains, many of whose indentures remain in very submissive terms, in which the tribute called black-rent is relinquished ; several of the old English race also were reduced to submission. At this time a remarkable instance occurs of the poverty or œconomy of those days. It was agreed in council, that as the hall of the castle of Dublin, and the windows thereof were in a ruinous state, and “that there was in the treasury a certain ancient silver seal cancelled,” which was of no use to the king, the said seal should be broken up and sold, and the money laid out on the said hall and windows.

EXERCISES.

How was Henry V. occupied during his reign? What was the conduct of the Irish parliament while Crawley was governor? Who succeeded him? What was Sir J. Talbot's character? How did he manage affairs? How were the descendents of the settlers looked on by the people of England? What was the cause of this? What acts were passed in England in consequence? What offence did Merbury give? What party was pleased at the appointment of Ormond? What were the grievances complained of in the petition to the king? What proof is there that the petition was attended to? What aid was voted by the parliament at Trim? What occurred on the appointment of the bishop of Meath? What remarkable act of council passed at this time?

CHAPTER IV.

State of the Pale—Complaints against Ormond—Duke of York Vice-gerent.

Ireland now enjoyed some tranquillity, but it did not continue long, and it appears by the representations of a

A. D. parliament, that the pale was so greatly straitened,
1430. that the county of Dublin was alone entirely free from the power of the Irish: the neglect shewn

by the Lancastrian princes to the earls of Desmond and

Kildare, and the favour shewn to the earl of Ormond,

were the cause of jealousies and animosities, which were

suspended until a favourable opportunity should occur of

giving way to their suggestions—the nephew of the pre-

sent earl of Desmond had, while he enjoyed the title,

married Catharine Mc'Cormack, the daughter of one of

his dependents, a beautiful and virtuous woman. This

unequal match was looked upon as a great degradation

by his followers. His uncle, James, took advantage of

this circumstance, and at the head of his adherents, thrice

expelled his nephew from his country, and obliged him

to make a formal surrender of his estate and dignity,

which James had confirmed to him. Under a pretended

grant, he possessed himself of an extensive district, call-

ed the kingdom of Cork, which he held in defiance of the

legal claims of the Carews and Courceys. Having join-

ed with Ormond in a quarrel between the houses of

Butler and Talbot, he obtained, by the influence of the

former, several important favours; he was by patent go-

vernor of Waterford, Cork, Limerick and Kerry;

A. D. and, under pretence that his services were ne-

1443. cessary in the remoter districts, and that his

journeys to parliament were inconvenient, and dangerous

to one hated by the Irish, on account of his attachment to the crown, he was licenced to absent himself from all future parliaments, and allowed to send a proxy. Thus he was left to exercise a sovereignty in his own territories, detached from the English government, in all the state of an independent chieftain. In consequence of some private quarrels, Ormond was obliged to lead his forces against Desmond, who bid defiance to that government which had given him so much consequence. He was so powerfully supported that the viceroy was forced to treat with his antagonist as with an independent sovereign. A truce concluded for a year, gave Desmond an opportunity of intriguing with the enemies of the governor. And now Ormond, hitherto so popular, found his influence every day declining, and himself insulted with impunity. Representations were made to the court of England with so much effect, that the king was induced to send a special mandate, ordering the earl to repair to his presence, and explain the causes of those discontents which had been conveyed to the throne. Ormond summoned the nobility and gentry of the pale to attend him at Drogheda; he informed them of the royal mandate, and that after a government of three years, administered with fidelity and success, he was called on to render an account of his conduct at the foot of the throne. "The English agents" said he, "who bring the royal orders are here before you, and in their presence I boldly appeal to my most inveterate enemy—if any such there be in this assembly, let him boldly stand forth—let him declare in what I have offended; let him point out the single instance in which the subject hath suffered by my injustice, or the state by my neglect. Here let me be brought to the severest scrutiny, not insidiously maligned in my absence." The power of conscious innocence was irre-

sistible,—the most honourable testimonies were borne to his integrity and services, and the order for his departure was countermanded. His enemies were not, however, defeated, and succeeded in carrying an address in parliament of a different nature, which was transmitted to the king; and, notwithstanding his majesty received from the bishops of Cork and Cloyne several temporal lords, and some corporations, the amplest testimonials in the earl's favour, his enemies succeeded; and Talbot, earl of Shrewsbury, now created earl of Waterford, was sent into Ireland to take the administration of government into his

hands. Talbot was attended by 700 chosen men:
 A. D. he first reduced the Irish chieftains, and then
 1445. turned his attention to the hostilities among the

English, some of the most obnoxious of whom, particularly of the Berminghams, were seized, condemned, and executed. The public peace being thus restored, a parliament was convened at Trim: in this assembly it was

declared highly penal to conform to the Irish fashion of the hair and beard; it was enacted, that
 A. D. the denized Irish, guilty of robbery or homicide,
 1447. should forfeit their privilege and be treated as enemies. It was forbidden to receive clipped or counterfeit coin; it was also enacted that no person should use gold trappings, horse furniture, or gilded harness, except knights or prelates; and to discourage the transportation of bullion, a custom of twelve pence was imposed on each ounce of silver so transported.—Talbot resigned himself entirely to the faction which opposed the earl of Ormond; he even went so far as, on his return to England, to accuse him of treason before the duke of Bedford. But the king, either from his own indulgent temper, or the policy of his minister, interposed his authority, and stopped the prosecution of this charge. The prior of Kil-

mainham renewed the charge, which was to be supported by combat ; but the king again interposed, and this repeated favour shewn to the earl of Ormond seems to have laid the foundation of that lasting attachment which his family afterwards discovered to the house of Lancaster.—The petitions sent to every English parliament, describing the hostile disposition of the Irish in aggravated terms, seem to have afforded a pretence for appointing Richard, duke of York, vicegerent of Ireland. He stipulated to hold his government for ten years: to receive the whole revenue of Ireland, an annual pension of 2000 marks from England, and an immediate advance of 2000 marks; to be empowered to let the king's lands, to dispose of all offices, to levy forces, name his deputy, and return at his pleasure.

A.D. His arrival and appearance was splendid and magnificent. He entertained every party with equal
1449 kindness, and the Irish subjects, whose jealousies had too often been awakened by the neglect of former governors, and their indignation roused by contempt, were captivated by a prince who treated them agreeably to their ideas of their own consequence and merits.—Ormond, though he was known to be remarkably attached to the reigning prince, was nevertheless received by the new governor with the respect and attention due to his rank. His intercourse with the English court, which had formed him to the manners of rank and station, taught him to value the civilities of the duke, and return them by an exterior of respect and deference. Desmond, who lived retired, rather with the port of an Irish chieftain than an English subject, being less experienced, was captivated by the obliging demeanor of the duke of York, who soon after his arrival had an opportunity of shewing an impartial attention to these great rivals.—

His son, afterwards George duke of Clarence, was born in the castle of Dublin. Ormond and Desmond were chosen sponsors, a circumstance which had its effect on Desmond, who was strongly possessed with the Irish ideas of gossipred and its ties, and was thus confirmed in his attachment to the duke. The son of a northern chieftain named M'Eochaghan, either to avenge some wrongs, or from the impetuosity of youthful valour, had made an inroad into Meath. This gave occasion to the duke to press for the stipulated remittances from England ; but when the duke marched against M'Eochaghan, the danger was found to be very trifling ; a treaty was concluded, and the young chieftain returned, boasting that he had given peace to the king's lieutenant.

EXERCISES.

What excited jealousies between the Geraldines and Butlers ? How did the nephew of the earl of Desmond lose his estate and title ? How did Desmond obtain several important favours ? What were these favours ? In what manner did he act towards Ormond ? How did Ormond act when summoned to England ? What effect had his conduct ? Who succeeded him ? What force had Talbot ? What steps did he take to restore tranquility ? What was enacted by the parliament held at Trim ? To what faction did Talbot resign himself ? How did the king act when Ormond was accused ? On what conditions did the duke of York accept the office of viceroy ? How did he act during his administration ? What means did he employ for reconciling Ormond and Desmond ? What Irish chieftain made an inroad into Meath ? What triumph did he boast of ?

CHAPTER V.

Duke of York's administration—Generous contest between O'Connor and his son—Duke of York's debate—Desmond chief governor.

THE duke of York took every opportunity of recommending himself as well to the native Irish as to the English subjects, and enforced all the institutions which were calculated to remedy and repress the disorders and abuses which were then the subjects of popular complaint.—

A. D. A law was enacted by a parliament convened in
1450. Dublin, to restrain the number of idle followers kept by the lords Marchers, another to declare it lawful to kill every man found robbing a subject, and entitling the person who performed such a service, to a reward to be levied of the district where it occurred.

While the duke of York was thus acquiring popular favour in this kingdom, and increasing the number of his adherents, he was in England accused of raising the insurrection headed by Cade, and orders were given to the sheriffs of the counties along the English coast, to oppose his landing. He, however, found means to elude their vigilance, and return to England, leaving the earl of Ormond his deputy. The earl summoned a parliament at Drogheda. He was soon after appointed lord lieu-

A. D. tenant by the king, and on being obliged to go to
1451. England, he named as his deputy the archbishop of Armagh. The government of an ecclesiastic, however, not suiting the turbulence of the times, the earl was soon commanded to return to Ireland, where he in

A. D. a short time died. The administration now de-
1452. volved on Sir Edward Fitz-Eustace, who was well fitted by his warlike qualities for a govern-

ment which required vigour and activity. O'Connor, the chieftain of O'Fally, made an inroad into the district of Kildare; he was surprised by Fitz-Eustace, and his troops routed. The chieftain, in endeavouring to escape, fell from his horse; his son who accompanied him, stopped and remounted him. Unhappily the father fell a second time; a generous contest was now begun between the father and son, which of them should be left to the mercy of the pursuers. The son pressed his father to take his horse and to escape. The father refused, commanded his son to fly, and was quickly taken prisoner. But as it appeared that his object was only plunder, he was soon released without injury.

A. D. During Fitz-Eustace's administration, several laws were passed, calculated to promote the ease
1454. of the subject.

The duke of York, now protector of the realm, removed Fitz-Eustace, and replaced him by the earl of Kildare, who was warmly devoted to his interests. When Richard was defeated at Bloreheath, York fled into Ireland, and was followed by many of his party, who were received with open arms in Ireland, while they were declared traitors by the successful side in England.

Writs were issued against the duke's followers, but he evaded their execution by prevailing on the Irish parliament to enact a law declaring that it had ever been the custom in Ireland to entertain strangers with all hospitality, and that it should be deemed high treason for any person, under any authority, to disturb persons so supported. An agent of the earl of Ormond, who ventured to act under the king's writ, was executed accordingly as a traitor.

The Irish Parliament now confirmed the duke's patent, constituting him lieutenant of Ireland for ten years; and enacted that compassing his death should be high

treason—that Ireland was to be governed only by laws passed by its own parliaments—that no persons should be bound to answer any appeal or other matter out of Ireland.

A. D. The victory gained by the Yorkists at Northampton, recalled the duke from Ireland ; he was 1460. attended by a great number from Ireland ; but was soon after defeated, and slain at Wakefield.

The natives considered this action as the termination of the English power, and proceeded, each to possess himself of the lands which the settlers had abandoned or could not defend. As the government had no force to oppose the chieftains, it was reduced to the necessity of purchasing its security, and several chieftains received annual tributes ; this satisfied their pride, and while they continued to keep up their own broils, the English, as a sept, were allowed to live unmolested.

When the king's council recovered from the panic occasioned by the battle of Wakefield, they proceeded to exercise their ancient right of electing a governor, until the royal pleasure should be known. Their choice shewed their attachment to the house of York. Thomas, A. D. earl of Kildare, was appointed, and in virtue of 1461. his appointment summoned a parliament at Dublin. It was however, prorogued in consequence of the deposition of Henry, and the accession of Edward IV. The new king confirmed Kildare's appointment ; but his commission was soon superseded by the appointment of George duke of Clarence, to the lieutenancy of Ireland for life. Sir Rowland Fitz-Eustace was appointed his deputy.

The earl of Ormond was attainted and executed, and A. D. the Irish parliament passed an act for the attainder of several of the family of Butler, for adhering to the king's enemies. Sir John, brother to 1642.

the late earl, fled from his persecutors into Munster, with a number of followers from England. The name of Ormond was still powerful in Munster, and so many dependants flocked to him on his arrival, that he conceived himself strong enough to defy the deputy.

Fitz-Eustace might have found it difficult to repel these hostilities, had he not been aided by the earl of Desmond, who was anxious to take arms against the enemies of his master, and the rivals of his house. A pitched battle was fought, in which the Butlers sustained a signal defeat. In reward for his services, Desmond was appointed lord deputy, an exaltation which provoked the enemies of his house, who watched his conduct with severity, and industriously whispered their jealousies and complaints of his administration. He was soon engaged in hostilities with the sept of Melachlin, in the course of which he was defeated and taken prisoner. The son of O'Connor, who had displayed so generous a concern for his father's safety, was among the victors, and embraced this opportunity of shewing his gratitude for Desmond's indulgence to his parent, by conveying that nobleman to a place of safety.

The pale was now attacked by the O'Briens on the side of Leinster, and Desmond, weakened by his former defeat, was obliged to treat with O'Brien. Though Desmond's popularity was diminished, he was supported by A. D. the king and the parliament. It was now enacted, 1465. that the Irish residing among the English should wear the English garb, be sworn liege men to the king, and assume English surnames.

Tiptoft, earl of Worcester, on resigning the post of lord high constable to lord Rivers, was made lord deputy of Ireland, with very extensive powers. On his arrival, the enemies of Desmond crowded to him, and inveighed bitterly against the former deputy. It was alleged that

he intended to make himself independent sovereign of Ireland. Tiptoft became alarmed, and listened to these accusations with great attention.

In order to throw disgrace on the treaties made by A. D. Desmond, a parliament, which was convened at Dublin, enacted, that the tallage called blackrent, 1467. hitherto paid to the Irish, should in future be paid to the deputy for the support of the army.

This parliament was adjourned to Drogheda, and passed an act for attainting the earls of Desmond and Kildare, and Edward Plunket. Kildare was taken, but escaped; Desmond repaired to the deputy to justify his conduct, and was instantly beheaded. 1468.

EXERCISES.

How did the duke of York conduct himself in his administration? What laws were enacted in 1450? What was the cause of the duke's leaving Ireland? Who was his deputy? Who succeeded him? What was the contest between O'Connor and his son? Who was appointed deputy when the duke of York was protector? Why? What became of the duke of York after the battle of Blore heath? What means did he take to protect his followers? What law did the Irish parliament enact to protect the duke? On what occasion did he leave Ireland? Where was he killed? What opinion prevailed in Ireland after that action? In what state were the English settlers at that time? Who was elected chief governor? What acts were passed after the accession of Edward IV.? Who was beheaded? Who resisted the deputy's power? By whose means was the earl of Ormond's brother reduced? How was he rewarded? By whom was he taken prisoner? How did he escape? What law was passed in 1465? Who succeeded Desmond? What steps did his enemies take? What became of the earl?

CHAPTER VI.

*Earl of Kildare invested with the government of Ireland—
Institution of the fraternity of St. George—Refuses to
resign to Lord Grey.*

SOME attempts made to revenge the earl's death, were ineffectual ; the enemies of his house, however, did not long enjoy their triumph. The earl of Kildare boldly went to the king, was favourably received and pardoned. The same parliament which condemned him, reversed his attainder, and he was soon after appointed lord deputy in room of Tiptoft, who suffered in England under the same sentence he had executed on Desmond. A. D. 1470. The Geraldines thus became once more the ruling family among the English subjects.

The new deputy summoned a parliament, in which he had such acts passed as he wished, and by which he was able to repay to his enemies the persecution he and his friends had suffered.

On the restoration of Henry VI. the duke of Clarence was created by patent lord lieutenant of Ireland, for twenty years ; there was not, however, any change made in the Irish administration by that short-lived revolution. We have printed, thirty-six acts of the reign of Henry VI. during which there were eleven sessions.

A. D. 1473. The earl of Kildare now raised a company of 160 archers, and 64 spearmen, for the protection of the pale, and parliament provided for their support. He also instituted a fraternity of arms consisting of thirteen persons of the highest rank, who assembled in Dublin annually on St. George's day, and were thence called the fraternity of St. George. This body consisted of the earl of Kildare, lord Portlester, sir Rowland Eustace, for the county Kildare ; lord

Howth, mayor of Dublin, sir Robert Dowdal, for Dublin; lord Gormanston, Edward and Alexander Plunket, Barnaby Barnwal, for meath, mayor of Drogheda, Sir Laurence Taaf, Richard Bellew, for Argial now Louth.

While the earl of Kildare was thus exercising his government, his enemies were watching an opportunity of supplanting him.

Since the execution of the earl of Ormond, this house had remained in a state of obscurity, until John, the elder of the surviving brothers, who had escaped into England, obtained his pardon from Edward: and so much admired was he by that prince, that he said of him, "he is the goodliest knight, and finest gentleman in christendom; and if good breeding, nurture, and liberal qualities were lost in the world, they would be found in John earl of Ormond."

The favour shewn to him by the king, gave spirit to his partisans in Ireland, who now braved their rivals, and threatened to revive the whole fury of private and political feuds. They represented, through Ormond the conduct of Kildare, as it suited their purposes: at length Kildare was removed, and Sherwood, bishop of Meath, the old enemy of his house, succeeded him: the A. D. new deputy summoned a parliament which repealed the act of attainder formerly passed against 1475. John, and declared him fully restored to his estate and dignity.

The animosities which were now revived, threatened to involve the whole kingdom in discord, when the earl of Ormond undertook a pilgrimage to the holy land, and the earl of Kildare died. These two events suspended for some time the hostilities of the rival families. New commotions however, were soon produced by fresh competitions for authority. The bishop of Meath was re-

requested by parliament to lay the state of the kingdom before the king; the Geraldines prepared counter addresses. The struggle ended in the appointment of the young earl of Kildare, lord justice to the king. But scarcely had he been appointed, when lord Grey was made deputy to the duke of Clarence, and sent into Ireland; with 300 men at arms, and a company of archers, as the surest means of giving weight to his government.

The deputy, notwithstanding, was most unfavourably received; some informality was pretended or discovered in his commission. Kildare refused to resign; the chancellor withdrew with the seal, and the prior of Kilmainham fortified the Castle of Dublin, of which he was constable, and refused to admit Grey. The deputy, on the other hand, took measures against his opponents, when the death of the duke of Clarence, by which the place of lord lieutenant became vacant, served to increase these contests.

Edward conferred the vacant office on his infant son, George, and Grey was appointed his deputy by a new commission. An assembly, purporting to be the king's council, elected Kildare. Thus was the flame rekindled between rival governors, contending parliaments, and opposing privy councils. Such representations were made to Edward of the confusion occasioned by these factions, that he summoned Kildare and several others to England, to inform him of the causes of these disorders. At the same time lord Grey retired, and Preston, lord Gormanston, was appointed his successor; he soon resigned to the earl of Kildare, who on his return from England was entrusted with the government as deputy to Richard duke of York who became lord lieutenant on the death of prince George.

Kildare was commissioned to hold his office for four

years, to have a standing force of 140 horsemen; and if the Irish revenue should prove unequal to this establishment, he was to be supplied from England.

Kildare now enjoyed his preeminence unrivalled, and his influence among the Irish was greatly increased by the marriage of his sister to Con. O'Nial, son to the chieftain of the north, the first in pride and power among the Irish lords. The husband was, on this occasion, declared a liege subject of the king, and invested with all the rights annexed to this character, by an act of parliament.

The influence of the earl was now so great, that it was considered adviseable to continue him in office during the remainder of this reign, and through those of Edward V. and Richard III. a period during which nothing interesting occurs in Irish history.—There are in the statute-book, twenty three laws of Edward IV. passed during nine sessions. None of Edward V. or Richard III.

EXERCISES.

What means did the earl of Kildare take to obtain his pardon? Who succeeded Tiptoft? Which was now the ruling family in Ireland? How many acts of Henry VI. are printed? What forces did Kildare raise for the protection of the pale? What fraternity did he institute? By whose means did the family of Ormond recover its power? What did king Edward say of John earl of Ormond? By what means was the earl of Kildare brought into disgrace? Who succeeded him? What suspended the quarrels between the Butlers and the Geraldines? For what purpose was the bishop of Meath sent into England? What steps did the Geraldines take? Which of the parties was then successful? What force did lord Grey take to Ireland? What occurred on his arrival? What means did the king take of putting a stop to the confusion that followed? What force was given to Kildare on his being again made deputy? How did he strengthen his influence with the Irish? How many laws of Edward IV. are in the statute book? How many of Edward V. and Richard III.?

CHAPTER VII.

Accession of Henry VII.—Lambert Simnel.

A. D. 1485. THE restoration of the Lancastrian line in Henry VII. was very unacceptable to the greater number of noble families in Ireland, who were zealously attached to the house of York. The office of lord lieutenant, the title and emoluments of which, had for a long time been given to some prince of the blood, was now conferred on the earl of Pembroke, uncle to the king; and to the astonishment of all who was acquainted with Irish affairs, the earl of Kildare was continued lord-deputy, and all other officers, many of whom were zealous Yorkists, retained their places.

The great influence of Kildare, and his attachment to his party, soon appeared in the conduct of one of his adherents, Keating, prior of Kilmainham having alienated the revenues, and sold the ornaments and reliques of his house, he was deprived by his principal, the grand master of Rhodes; and Lumley, an Englishman, was appointed to succeed him; on Lumley's landing, he was seized by Keating, and forced to resign the instruments of his appointment; Lumley complained to the king and the master, and Keating was excommunicated; provoked by this, he again seized Lumley and cast him into prison, where he died unredressed, while Keating kept possession of his benefice. The power of the earl received additional strength from the absence of the earl of Ormond at the court of England; while the earl of Desmond, proud of the privilege by which he was exempted from attending parliament, lived at a distance from the seat of government, in a state of rude magnificence.

The king soon had reason to repent of the confidence he had reposed in Kildare ; several reports were circulated of the attachment of the English settlers to the house of York, and Kildare was represented to the king, as one who particularly favoured some secret designs to revive the claims of that family ; Kildare was summoned to attend the king in England, under the pretence of consulting him on Irish affairs ; the earl, unwilling to comply, summoned the lords spiritual and temporal of the pale, to whom he communicated the mandate ; they transmitted an address to the king, in which they expressed their sense of the danger which might flow from the deputy's absence. Kildare relying on this address, deferred his journey, and the king affected to be satisfied.

The managers of Simnel's imposture, a youth who was instructed by Richard Simon, an ecclesiastic, to personate the earl of Warwick, chose Ireland as the first scene of their operations, as the true earl was known by few there, and the majority were friendly to the claims of his family.

On his arrival, Simnel waited on the deputy, represented the hardships he had sustained, and claimed his protection and assistance in prosecuting his claim to the throne of England. The earl, prepared probably for this application, communicated this extraordinary event to the officers of state, who received the adventurer with every mark of respect, and announced the arrival of the earl of Warwick. The citizens caught the flame of party zeal ; the intelligence spread, and almost all declared in favour of the son of Clarence. Simnel was now proclaimed king by the name of Edward VI. and his rights disputed by none but the citizens of Waterford, the Butlers, the Berminghams, and some prelates.

Henry now ordered the real earl of Warwick to be

taken from the tower, and shewn in London, to convince the people of England of the imposition practised in Ireland.

Neither this, however, nor the promulgation of papal bulls, denouncing the dreadful sentence of excommunication against all Henry's enemies, had any effect on his subjects in Ireland; and on the arrival of the earl of Lincoln, viscount Lovel, and other malcontents from England, with two thousand troops from Flanders, commanded by Swaart, a valiant and experienced general, the partizans of the adventurer were filled with the utmost confidence.

Simnel was conducted in state to Christ Church; his right explained and enforced in a sermon, by the bishop of Meath, and a crown placed on his head; he was then conducted to the castle of Dublin in pomp, on the shoulders of Darcy, the head of an English family in Meath: a ceremony probably adopted from the custom of the native Irish.

The young king now summoned a parliament, in which laws were enacted, and subsidies granted, and the administration of affairs conducted in the name of Edward VI.

It was now determined to carry the war into England, and dethrone Henry.

Simnel embarked, attended by several of the settlers, numerous attended by their Irish adherents.

The earl of Kildare remained in Ireland to attend to the affairs of government; but his brother resigned the place of chancellor to follow the fortunes of his new sovereign.

A. D. Henry was prepared to oppose the invaders.
1487. The two armies met at Stoke in Nottingham, where, after a desperate and bloody battle, in which the valour of the Irish troops was particularly con-

spicuous, the rebels were defeated; the principal leaders were slain in the battle, and Simnel, who was captured, obliged to exchange the prospect of a crown for a post in the royal kitchen.

To avert the storm which was now to be apprehended, the earl of Kildare, and other lords, dispatched some of their adherents to the king, to acknowledge their fault, and promise for the future, the most dutiful attachment to his government; Henry thought it expedient to be satisfied, and the earl was continued in his government.

EXERCISES.

How was the accession of Henry VII. received in Ireland? Who was appointed lord lieutenant? Who was his deputy? What was the conduct of Keating? What was Lumley's fate? What contributed to strengthen the power of Kildare? Why did the king call Kildare to England? What did the earl do when summoned? Who personated the earl of Warwick? Where did he first practise his imposture? How was he received? What means did Henry take to prove him an impostor? What part did the pope take? What city opposed Simnel? When was he crowned? In whose name was the country governed then? Where in England did he meet Henry's army? What was the issue of the battle of Stoke? What became of Simnel? How did Henry act towards the earl of Kildare?

CHAP. VIII.

King takes measures to secure the Allegiance of his Irish Subjects—Feuds of the Chieftains—Perkin Warbeck—State of the Kingdom.

NOTWITHSTANDING this appearance of reconciliation between the king and his English subjects in Ireland, he thought it necessary to send sir Richard Edge-

combe into Ireland, with 500 men, to oblige the subjects to renew their oaths of allegiance, and to tender the royal pardon on such conditions, as might assure the king of their future loyalty. On his arrival at Kinsale, he at first refused to land, and obliged Barry, a principal lord, to attend him on board, to take the oath of allegiance. He afterwards landed and received the oath and homage of lord Courcey. At Waterford he commended the citizens for their loyalty, and then proceeded to Dublin, where the magistrates received him with submission. Kildare, however, with great difficulty consented to an interview, in which he returned the haughty severity of the commissioner with cold civility.

At length the earl agreed to do homage, and take the oaths; several other noblemen followed his example; they were all absolved from the sentence of excommunication, and Kildare was presented with a chain from the king.

Keating, the prior of Kilmainham, was alone excepted from the general pardon, and was obliged to save himself by flight.

It was not, however, easy to allay all the jealousies and animosities of the rival lords; and such representations were made by one party, that the king found it necessary to summon into England Kildare, and some other nobles. They attended the king, and after some expostulations, received a confirmation of the royal pardon and confidence. At an entertainment given them by the king, Simnel officiated as a butler, and after this mortification, they were dismissed with promises of favour, equal to their future loyalty.

The English power in Ireland was now strengthened, by the contentions of some chieftains in Munster, where O'Carrol of Ely, and Mac Arthy fell in different battles, fought with the earl of Desmond.

In the North, a bloody feud was long kept up between O'Nial and a neighbouring chieftain, from whom O'Nial demanded the recognition of his authority, by paying tribute, which was then demanded: "send me tribute, or else"—this was answered by, "I owe you none—and if"—. At length the murder of O'Nial, and the infirmities of his rivals, suspended hostilities.

Perkin Warbeck, a new pretender, now set up his claim, and Henry, afraid of another attempt in Ireland, removed the old officers of state, for whom others, in whom he had greater confidence, were substituted; arch-
 A. D. bishop Walter was appointed deputy. This pre-
 late now convened his parliament, and nothing
 1492. that could mortify his opponents was neglected.
 An act of resumption of all grants, since 1st Henry VI. was passed; this was the usual instrument of revenge, made use of by every faction.

During the commotions to which this change of ad-
 A. D. ministration gave rise, Perkin Warbeck landed
 1493. on the Southern coast, and appeared in the city
 of Cork, in the character of Richard Planta-
 gonet, who had escaped from the tower; he was re-
 ceived by the chief magistrate with due honour. Hence he sent letters to Desmond and Kildare, entreating their assistance for the recovery of his rights; Desmond declared in his favour at once, Kildare was not explicit in his manner of receiving this invitation; but before any thing could be done, Perkin was called into France by king Charles.

Short as Warbeck's residence was in Ireland, it was long enough to inflame the violence of faction, to excite rumours and jealousies, and to afford occasion for interested reports and accusations at the court of England. The pale had been lately visited by a fatal disease, and famine had succeeded. Still these calamities did not suspend the rivalry of the great lords.

Harrassed by repeated accounts and complaints of the state of his subjects in Ireland, Henry dispatched a mandate to the archbishop of Dublin, to repair to England, and lay a full statement before him of the circumstances of his Irish government. The archbishop obeyed this order, and left Preston, lord Gormanston, in his room ; the appointment of this partizan of the Geraldines, gave offence to the opposite party, who refused to attend his parliament, and fresh clamours were excited.

In the mean time Walter attended on the king, to whom it does not appear that he was able satisfactorily to account for the state in which Irish affairs were. He was however, so favourably received by the king, that Kildare, dreading that his representations to the king might be prejudicial to himself, went into England, and pathetically represented to the king the indefatigable malice of his enemies. Henry was by this time fully prepossessed against him ; he was told that various charges were urged against him, but that they must be enquired into in Ireland, where he must make his defence ; and that for this purpose he must attend a new deputy about to embark.

Henry now determined to begin with an entirely new administration of Irish government, composed of men of approved attachment to the throne, and unconnected with any of the different factions, which had raised such commotions in Ireland. Sir Edward Poynings was appointed deputy, with a force of 1000 men : an English lord chancellor accompanied him, as did English lawyers, to replace the former judges who were removed ; all on their arrival were sworn of the privy council.

A. D. At this time the English interest in Ireland was
1594. at a very low ebb. There were no less than 60
distinct districts, governed each by its own Irish

chieftain, according to the ancient laws, and customs of the kingdom. And besides these, several English proprietors had adopted the customs and manners of the country. Obedience to the English law was confined within the limits of half the counties of Uriel, Meath, Kildare, Dublin, and Wexford, and in these districts the settlers had conformed to the Irish language and habits.

EXERCISES.

Why was Sir Richard Edgecombe sent into Ireland? What force was given him? At what place did he first arrive? What was his conduct there? What city did he then visit? How was he received by Kildare? Who was excepted from the general pardon? Who were summoned into England? How did the king mortify them? What took place in Munster? What in Ulster? Why did Henry change the officers of state in Ireland? What act of parliament was then passed? Where did Warbeck land? Who declared in his favour? Why was the Archbishop of Dublin summoned to England? What occurred in his absence? How did Kildare act? How did they determine to govern the kingdom? Who was sent over chief-governor? What changes were made? What was the state of the kingdom?

RECAPITULATION.

In what year did Richard II. ascend the throne? What complaints did the English parliament make respecting Ireland? What complaints were made by the Irish parliament? What law was passed in consequence? What steps were taken to improve the revenue? What proof of folly did Richard give with respect to the kingdom of Ireland? What were the particulars of the grant made to the earl of Oxford? What offer did Gloucester make? In what year did Richard II. land? What occurred during his stay? How many chieftains made their submission to him? On what occasion was the earl of Marche killed? What produced Richard's second visit, and in what year did he come? What was the result of his campaign against Mac Murchad? When did Henry II. ascend the throne? What effect had his accession on Ireland? What proves the weakness of the English of the pale during Henry IV. reign? When did Henry V. begin to reign? What

attention did he pay to Ireland? What was the state of the kingdom when Sir John Talbot arrived? What opinion prevailed in England at this time respecting the English of the pale? What gave rise to this opinion? What effects did it produce? What occurred respecting a petition to the king? What were the objects of that petition? In what year did Henry III. die? What followed from the appointment of the Bishop of Meath? When was the tribute called black-rent relinquished? What proof of the economy or poverty of those times remains? What enabled the earl of Desmond to deprive his nephew of his title and estate? What proof is given of his power? What return did Ormond receive for his services? What was enacted in the parliament held at Trim in 1447? What attached the earl of Ormond to the house of Lancaster? What stipulations did the duke of York make on coming to Ireland? When did he arrive? What was the nature of his administration? What means did he take to shew to Ormond and Desmond impartial attention? In what way did the duke of York conduct himself while vicegerent? Why did he leave Ireland? What is the account given of O'Connor and his father? What did the duke of York do when protector to secure his interest in Ireland? At what time was that? On what occasion did he return to Ireland? How did he protect his adherents? What law was then passed respecting the government of Ireland? On what occasion did the duke return to England? In what year? What battle followed and what was thought of it in Ireland? In what way were the English looked on by the Irish chieftains? Why was the earl of Desmond appointed deputy? What law respecting the native Irish was passed in 1465? What law was passed respecting black-rent and why? In 1473 who was chief governor and what did he do? By whose means was the house of Ormond revived? In what year was lord Grey made deputy? What occurred on his arrival? How did Kildare strengthen his influence with the Irish? Through what reign was he continued governor and why? What was the conduct of Keating prior of Kilmainham when his successor was appointed? Why was Ireland selected as the place for first trying Simnel's imposture? What reception did he meet? What foreign troops came to his aid? Where in England and in what year did he engage Henry, and what was the result? How did Kildare and his party act on this occasion? What means did the king take to assure himself of their loyalty? What impostor most disturbed Henry's reign? When did he land in Ireland? By whom was he joined? What was the king's determination with respect to Ireland in 1493? What was then the state of Ireland?

BOOK THE FIFTH.

CHAPTER I.

Hostilities of O'Hanlon—Parliament summoned—Kildare tried before Henry.

PERIOD IV.

A. D. SIR Edward Poynings's plan was a general re-
1494. form of the state, but before he could make any
progress in civil matters, he was called into the
field by the hostilities of O'Hanlon, a northern chieftain.

The deputy was accompanied by Sir James Ormond, and also by the earl of Kildare, who, to regain the royal favour, appeared zealous in the English interest. His enemies, however, assured Poynings that he was in secret correspondence with O'Hanlon. Poynings became alarmed; other circumstances concurred to strengthen his suspicions of the earl, who was arrested and confined. The deputy then hastily concluded a treaty with the Irish, whose peculiar mode of warfare, suddenly issuing from morasses and mountains, and as suddenly retiring, offered to the deputy little chance of acquiring military fame by pursuing the war.

He then marched to besiege the castle of Carlow, of which James, brother to Kildare, had possessed himself, in defiance of the royal authority; the castle capitulated in a few days.

A. D. The deputy now summoned a parliament which
1495. met at Drogheda, in which a number of laws were
passed, calculated to reform the pale, and relieve
the subject from the oppression of the great lords. In
place of the severe impositions of coyne and livery for

the support of the soldiers, a tax of twenty six and eight pence, was laid on every six score acres for five years—pensions which had been paid to the lords marchers and other lords, for the pretended purpose of securing their possessions, were annulled. It was also enacted, that no citizen, burgess, or freeman of any city, should receive pay or wages as the follower of any great lord—and that no lord, or other persons, not connected with corporate towns, should be admitted into their councils.

It was forbidden to make war or peace without the license of the deputy—all compulsory alienations of church lands were revoked; it was forbidden to keep hand guns or great guns without licence—military cries and words of distinction used by different factions, were declared seditious and illegal. It was forbidden to prosecute murder, which was now declared to be high treason, in the Irish way of compelling the sept to pay a fine—the statutes of Kilkenny were revived and confirmed, except that against the use of the Irish language. It was ordained, that all former statutes “be enquired of,” and for the future carefully enrolled. An act was passed entrusting the government to the lord treasurer in case of the death or surrender of a chief governor, and the council was deprived of the power of election.

In consideration of the inconvenience experienced from patents for life, which had emboldened officers to misuse their authority, it was enacted that the chancellor, judges, &c. should have no authority by patent, but only at the king’s pleasure. It was provided that none but men of English birth should hold the principal places of strength throughout the kingdom, particularly the priory of St. John of Jerusalem. But the two acts most celebrated, are those which enacted that all statutes, “lately made within the realm of England, belonging to the public weal of the same,” should be in force in Ire-

land ; and that no parliament be holden in Ireland until the acts be certified into England. The object of this latter act was to prevent different parties, as they were in power, to make parliaments an engine of annoyance and persecution, by passing acts to the prejudice of the interests of individuals, without any reference to the furtherance of the public good. This parliament passed an act of attainder against the earl of Kildare, who was now sent by Poynings to answer his accusers before Henry.

Perkin made a second attempt on Ireland, and supported by the earl of Desmond, had besieged Waterford, and when the siege was raised by the Ormonds and other opposers of the Geraldines, retired to the king of Scots. This gave rise to a suspicion that the earls of Kildare and Desmond were in correspondence with this prince.

Poynings now returned to England, and for his services received the honour of the garter, and Kildare was after some delay, allowed to confront his enemies in the king's presence ; when Henry found, instead of a subtle and dangerous conspirator, a man of even awkward simplicity, confident apparently of his own innocence.

On being told by the king to provide himself with the ablest counsel, " Yea," replied the earl, " the ablest in the realm," seizing Henry by the hand, " Your highness I take for my counsel against these false knaves." The king smiled at this uncouth compliment to his equity and discernment. He soon perceived that the allegations of the earl's enemies were dictated by private resentment, and was not displeased to see Kildare treat them as a superior, still in power. One of the accusations was, that the earl had burned the church of Cashel to the ground. " Spare your evidence," was the reply, " I did set fire to the church, for I thought the bishop had been in it." The prosecutors closed their charge with a declaration, " That all Ireland could not govern this earl." " Well," replied Henry " this earl shall govern all Ireland."

The triumph of Kildare was now complete ; he was restored to his estate and dignity, and consulted about the affairs of the kingdom ; and by his advice, Desmond and others who had favoured the cause of Perkin, were pardoned.

A. D. 1496. As the late act of parliament had greatly circumscribed the power of the chief governor, Henry had now no difficulty in entrusting the earl of Kildare with that office.

The administration of the earl was in the highest degree rigorous and politic ; he attacked the disturbers of the pale in every direction, and secured its peace. By marrying his sister to one of the Butlers, and supporting his aspiring brother-in-law against his rival, he divided and broke the power of that family. He married one of his daughters to Uliac of Clanricarde, one of the great lords of Connaught. The ill-treatment of his daughter by her husband produced a cavil between the deputy and his son-in-law, which ended in the total route of Clanricarde, at the battle of Knocktow, near Galway ; and this victory, which was produced by private quarrels, tended very much to strengthen the English interest, and Henry's favour to the earl was amply repaid by his administration during the remainder of his royal master's reign.

A. D. 1507. Henry died in 1507 ; of his reign we have 1507. twenty six laws passed in four sessions.

EXERCISES.

What first occurred after Sir Edward Poyning's arrival ? By whom was he accompanied when he took the field ? What information did he receive respecting the earl of Kildare ? How did the deputy act in consequence of the information he received ? What castle did he besiege and why ? Where did he summon a parliament ? What was the object of the laws passed there ? What were those laws ? Which of those acts are most celebrated ? What act was passed relative to the earl of Kildare ? Where was the earl sent ? What city was besieged by Warbeck ? Who openly assisted him ? By whom was he opposed ? To whom did he retire ? What honour was conferred on Poyning's for his services ? What occurred between Henry and the earl of Kildare ? What was the issue of his trial ? What was his conduct on being made chief governor ?

CHAPTER II.

Death of Kildare—Earl of Surrey Lord Deputy—Francis I. applies to Desmond—Insurrection of Lord Thomas Fitzgerald.

A. D. ON the accession of Henry VIII. the earl of
 1509. Kildare was continued in the government, and acted with his usual vigour, in repelling attacks, quieting commotions, and deciding contests in different parts of the kingdom; and of such consequence was he in Ireland, that his sudden sickness and death produced a general consternation among the friends, and a dangerous commotion among the enemies of the English government.

In this emergency the council and nobles elected Gerald, son to the late earl, lord deputy, and their nomination was afterwards confirmed in England. The name of Kildare was sufficient to check the enemy, and the new deputy soon had leisure to repair to Henry and confer with him and his ministers on the state of Ireland. On his return a parliament was held, and subsidies granted to the king.

A. D. A fresh commotion soon recalled Kildare to the
 1517. field. A prophecy had prevailed that the Irish would at this time recover their ancient power and splendour; considerable numbers in consequence took arms, but were by the vigour and activity of Kildare soon reduced. The progress of the deputy was notwithstanding soon checked by those family feuds which ever subsisted among the noble houses of Ireland. The Ormonds, unequal to cope with him openly, practised secretly against him in England, and prejudiced

Wolsey, then the minister of Henry VIII. so much against him, that he was ordered into England to answer the charges brought against him, and the government was entrusted to sir Thomas Fitzgerald, one of his own family.

While the earl was detained in England, neither acquitted nor condemned, Wolsey advised the king to entrust the management of Ireland to some one entirely unconnected with the contending parties there. In pursuance of this advice, Thomas, earl of Surrey, son to the duke of Norfolk, was selected and sent over with 100 guards, and 1000 forces of inferior rank. In the mean time Kildare was acquitted and set at liberty, and accompanied Henry to Calais when he went to meet the king of France.

The earl of Surrey proceeded to a spirited and vigorous administration, which was one continued course of military exploits, except a short interval of holding a parliament. While moderate, just, and magnificent, he was zealous for the interests of his sovereign, and attentive to the circumstances of the country in which he was stationed. After a government of two years, he returned to England with the prayers and acclamations of all the Irish subjects. He was succeeded by Piers, earl of Ormond, the inveterate enemy of Kildare.

Kildare on his return to Ireland, affected to co-operate with the deputy, yet practised secretly to raise opposition to his government, which he soon openly reprobated. The disputes of these rivals were examined into in England, where Kildare had made powerful connections by his marriage with the daughter of the marquis of Dorset. The contest at length ended in the removal of Ormond, and the appointment of Kildare in his room.

Kildare had not long enjoyed this honour, when the ambition of his kinsman Desmond threatened to involve

A. D. him in danger and disgrace. Henry had declared war against France, and the French king, to embarrass him, endeavoured to raise commotions in Ireland. For this purpose he applied to Desmond, whose vanity he flattered, by affecting to regard him as an independent prince: a negotiation was entered into and conducted on each side with all the forms of sovereign dignity; and they mutually agreed to an alliance offensive and defensive. Henry discovered this transaction, and orders were issued to Kildare to seize Desmond; but the earl, from partiality to his kinsman, was unwilling to execute these orders. He marched into Munster; Desmond retired but was not pursued. Some disturbances broke out in the north, and Kildare was more anxious to aid his kinsman, Con O'Nial, than to make Desmond a prisoner.

His enemies did not let this opportunity pass of exhibiting charges against the earl, who with difficulty escaped after a long imprisonment in England, where he had been called to answer the charges brought against him.

Ireland was now exposed to all the evils of short-lived feeble and disorderly administrations; at length sir William Skeffington was appointed deputy; he was directed to regard the earl of Kildare now restored to favour as his chief adviser, but in such a manner as to prevent all feuds between the Geraldines and Butlers. At first Kildare co-operated with the new deputy, but proud and accustomed to govern, he could not long support the mortification of acting an inferior part; he took every opportunity of thwarting the deputy, and when by the death of Wolsey, all apprehensions of his old and powerful enemy were taken away, he proceeded without reserve, until he succeeded in persuading the king to recall his deputy, and once more to intrust the administration into his own hands. To preserve an appearance of

impartiality, lord Butler, son to the earl of Ossory, was made lord high treasurer; this appointment, however had little weight in forming a balance against the power of Kildare, who managed at the same time to have the archbishop of Dublin, a favourite of Wolsey's, deprived of the seals, which were committed to a creature of his own, the archbishop of Armagh.

The extravagant length to which the earl now carried his enmity to the Ormond family, together with the disorders which attended the feuds of those families, soon worked the destruction of the earl's family. Representations of the state of affairs in Ireland were made to the king, and urged with so much earnestness, that the earl was ordered to entrust the government to some person for whom he could be responsible, and to repair to the king without delay. The earl endeavoured to evade this or-

A. D. der, but was forced to comply, and unwisely entrusted the government on his departure to his
1534. son Thomas, then scarcely twenty-two years old.

The difficulties of procuring accurate intelligence from England, rendered it for some time uncertain what had been the earl's fate, after his interview with Henry; reports were industriously circulated by the enemies of the Geraldines that he had been committed to the tower and put to death, and measures were taken to convince the lord deputy that his father was no more. He consulted with his Irish associates, who advised him to revenge the injuries of his family; they promised their assistance, and he at once embarked in a desperate rebellion. Attended by 140 well armed cavalry, he rushed into the midst of the council then sitting in Mary's abbey; the lords were alarmed; but the deputy calmed their apprehensions; he assured them, that though he had taken arms to avenge his father's death and defend himself against his enemies, he would proceed with the generosity of a soldier; that he

resigned the sword of state, and would depend on his own force. He warned them to avoid him as an enemy, no longer the deputy of Henry, but his mortal foe.

Cromer, the primate and chancellor, took him by the hand, and pathetically represented to him the rashness, weakness, and iniquity of his present attempt. After expatiating on the consequences, personal and national, that must follow such conduct, he conjured him to desist, before his offence should become too great for the royal clemency to pardon. This speech, delivered with emotion, in a language unknown to lord Thomas's Irish followers, was interpreted by them according to their own wishes; they understood the prelate to encourage him in his enterprise; and one of their own bards who attended in his train, that he might not be out-done in his own profession, began to sing the praises of young Thomas, chiding his delay, and calling him to the field. The effusions of the bard, overcame the counsels of the prelate, and the young Geraldine rushed forth at the head of his train; the Irish septs readily joined his standard, he traversed the pale without opposition, exacting of the inhabitants an oath of fidelity, and dispatched emissaries to the pope and the emperor to solicit assistance.

Lord Thomas now laid waste Fingal the granary of Dublin: the city was attacked with fire and sword, and the citizens, to save the town from destruction, were obliged to allow lord Thomas to besiege the castle in which the lords and officers of the state had taken refuge.

The archbishop of Dublin, in attempting to escape by sea, was taken and murdered. Lord Thomas now proposed to the earl of Ossory to bury all animosities, and to unite in one common cause, to rescue the kingdom from a foreign yoke, and then to divide Ireland between the two families. This proposal was rejected with dis-

dain, and Thomas, leaving a force to carry on the siege, marched to chastise the earl, whose lands became exposed to the ravages of the enemy.

At length, a messenger who had been dispatched to Henry, returned with assurances of immediate succour. The citizens immediately shut the gates and enclosed the party that had by compact been permitted to assail the castle; a few escaped by swimming through the Liffey. Lord Thomas, on receiving this intelligence, marched to Dublin and demanded his men, and on his being refused, formed the siege, for which his numbers had neither skill nor provisions; his troops were routed in a desperate sally made by the besieged. Lord Thomas now raised the siege, having effected the release of his men for whom he exchanged some children of the citizens, who had been removed to avoid a plague which had raged in the city, and had fallen into his hands.

His next attempt was to oppose the landing of the troops from England; at first his opposition was successful; but on sir Willam Brereton having effected a landing with 500 men and reached the city, his only resource was to retreat to Connaught.

Sir William Skeffington arrived soon after as deputy, with additional troops, but the severity of winter suspended all military operations. In spring, the castle of Maynooth held by the rebels, was beseiged; 14 days were consumed in vain, when the castle was betrayed by one of the garrison.

Lord Thomas had assembled a tumultuary army to relieve this castle, but his troops on hearing of its surrender, deserted in great numbers; their leader still ventured to seek the deputy in the field, tho with diminished numbers; 140 of his Gallowglasses had the misfortune to be made prisoners; and as intelligence was received that the main body advanced to give battle, Skeffington, with

a barbarous precaution, ordered them to be slaughtered, and one only escaped the carnage. The event shewed that this cruelty was unnecessary, for the Irish who had not before abandoned lord Thomas, shrunk at the first discharge of the English artillery.

This unhappy young lord, now found himself reduced to the state of a wretched outlaw, by his own folly. Through various scenes of wretchedness he made his escape into Munster. He was followed by lord Leonard Grey, one of the most active attendants on the lord deputy; after some inconsiderable skirmishes, he entered into a treaty with lord Grey, in which he stipulated for his personal safety; he then dismissed his troops, and attended Grey to Dublin.

The suppression of this rebellion closed the administration of Skeffington, who died near Dublin. Lord Grey was chosen by the council to succeed him, and their nomination was confirmed by the king.

Meanwhile, lord Thomas was sent into England, and on his way to Windsor was arrested and sent to the tower, where he had the mortification to find that the rumour on which he had acted was false, and that his father had lived to hear of his rebellion. Henry now breathed the most furious revenge against the whole family of Kildare; he submitted to his council, whether he had not now acquired a right to seize at once on all estates spiritual as well as temporal of the kingdom of Ireland; thus considering the suppression of this rebellion as a conquest of the island.

Lord Grey received orders to send over five uncles of lord Thomas's: of these, three were known to have entirely disapproved and opposed the insurrection. They were invited to a banquet by the deputy, entertained with every appearance of amity, and then made prisoners: they were conveyed to London, where, with their

nephew, they were condemned, and suffered the punishment of high treason. A brother of lord Thomas's, a boy of 12 years of age, was with difficulty saved from Henry's fury, and after many escapes, was protected by Cardinal Pole, who gave him an education suitable to his birth; and by his favour and support, preserved him to regain the honours of the family of Kildare.

EXERCISES.

What effect had the earl of Kildare's death? Who succeeded him? What induced the Irish to take arms? How did the enemies of Kildare act against him? What was the consequence of their accusations? What advice did Wolsey give the king respecting Ireland? Who was appointed deputy in consequence? What became of the earl of Kildare? What was Surry's character? Who succeeded him? What was the issue of the contest between him and Kildare? To whom did the king of France apply in Ireland? How did Kildare act when ordered to seize Desmond? What was the consequence? What directions did sir W. Skeffington receive? Why was he recalled? Who succeeded? What changes took place on his appointment? What orders did the deputy receive and why? To whom did he intrust the government? What induced lord Thomas to rebel? What occurred at the council? What proposal did he make to the earl of Ossory? What steps did Thomas take on receiving his answer? How was the siege of Dublin raised? What castle was taken from lord Thomas? Of what cruelty was Skeffington guilty? How did this rebellion end?

CHAPTER III.

Reformation—Parliamentary proceedings—Execution of Lord Grey—Henry made king of Ireland.

WHILE these events were passing in Ireland, the rest of Europe was agitated by the doctrines of Luther, and

Henry having successfully prosecuted the reformation in England, determined to extend it to Ireland. Commissioners were sent to confer with the nobility and clergy and to procure a general acknowledgment of the king's supremacy.

When the commissioners had explained their instructions, Cromer, primate of Armagh, an Englishman, who had once held the office of Chancellor, declared against so impious a design. He summoned the suffragans and clergy of his province, exhorted them to adhere inviolably to the apostolic chair, and denounced a tremendous curse on all who should sacrilegiously acknowledge the king's supremacy.

This opposition of the most eminent among the Irish prelates, enlivened the zeal of those who adhered to the see of Rome. The commission was treated with neglect, if not with contempt. It was therefore deemed advisable to summon an Irish parliament, which, like the English legislature, might by law enforce a general acknowledgment of the king's supremacy.

A. D. 1536. A parliament was accordingly convened at Dublin and, probably to prevent delay, the law of Poyning's requiring the transmission and certification of bills, was suspended with the king's assent. This parliament passed an act of attainder against the late earl of Kildare and his son's associates. The right of succession to the crown of England and lordship of Ireland was adjusted. They pronounced the king's marriage with Catharine of Arragon, to be null and void ; they declared the inheritance of the crown to be in the king, and his heirs by queen Anne, and pronounced it to be high treason to oppose this succession, and appointed an oath of allegiance to be taken for the establishment of it. This act had scarcely been passed when intelligence arrived of

the condemnation and death of Anne Boleyn, and the marriage of the king with the lady Jane Seymour. With the same compliance with the king's wishes as the English parliament had shewn, they instantly repealed the recent act, and passed sentence of attainder on the late queen and all who had been accused as accomplices in the supposed guilt of this unhappy lady.

The former marriages were by this act declared null and void, and the succession now confirmed to the heirs of the king by queen Jane; and in default of such, the king was empowered to dispose of the crown of England and the lordship of Ireland by letters patent or by will. The king was declared to be supreme head on earth, of the church of Ireland; all appeals to Rome were forbid. By another act, the authority of the bishop of Rome was more solemnly renounced, and the abettors of it in Ireland made subject to premunire.

All the laws passed, except those relating to ecclesiastical jurisdiction, were received without opposition. The Romish party was prepared for a vigorous contest. The two proctors, from each diocese, usually summoned to parliament, formed a formidable body of ecclesiastics, zealous for the holy see. They claimed to be members of the legislative body, with a full right to vote on every question. Before the act of supremacy was proposed, it was declared by a previous act, that their claims were presumptuous and groundless; that they were summoned merely as counsellors and assistants, whose assent was not necessary to any parliamentary transaction.

But although the opponents of the act were thus deprived of the assistance of a powerful body, yet, when it came to be proposed, lords and commons joined in expressing their abhorrence of the spiritual authority assumed by the king, while the other party was equally de-

terminated in their defence of it. Browne, who was lately created archbishop of Dublin, and was a strenuous advocate for the reformed doctrines, took the lead in supporting the king's spiritual authority. He declared that he freely and conscientiously accepted the king's highness as supreme in both realms in ecclesiastical as well as civil affairs.

Those who would not be convinced, now thought it prudent to reserve themselves for clandestinely opposing a law which they could not prevent from being passed.—Objections, founded on an ambiguity of expression in the act passed for the suspension of Poynings's law, were urged against the validity of the offensive acts. But as these objections were started before the parliament was dissolved, care was taken to remove the grounds on which they were urged, and to declare the validity of all acts of the present parliament. By one act twelve religious houses were suppressed. Other acts were passed for the internal regulation of the pale. All pensions paid by subjects to any Irish sept, were abolished, as the king's forces were declared to be sufficient for their protection. It was provided that no ecclesiastical preferment in the gift of a subject should be conferred on any but those who spoke the English language, unless upon repeated proclamation, none such could be found. And that an English school should be kept in every parish.

The deputy, during the intervals of the sitting of parliament, was actively and successfully employed, in preserving the peace of the pale; several chieftains, Irish and English, were compelled to treat and submit.

A. D. 1538. Meanwhile, the government was threatened with additional commotions, arising out of religious controversy. Archbishop Browne found the utmost difficulty, even in the seat of government, to counteract Cromer and his party, several in-

cumbents of the diocese of Dublin chose to resign their benefices, rather than acknowledge the king's supremacy.

A commission arrived from Rome, to Cromer and his associates, enjoining them to persevere boldly in support of the papal authority. They were empowered to absolve those who had taken the oath of supremacy, and to declare all those accursed, who held any power, ecclesiastical or civil, superior to that of the holy mother church. While the head of the northern clergy was, in virtue of this commission, exhorting spiritual resistance to the innovations on popery, a confederacy, headed by O'Nial, was formed and induced to take arms for the suppression of heresy. The governor having been reinforced by some troops from England, marched against the forces of Ulster, and came up with a detachment of the Irish, at Bellahoe, on the borders of Meath.—After a desperate resistance, victory declared for the deputy; the Irish detachment gave way, and flying in dismay, communicated the panic to the main body, which lay at some distance, and the whole dispersed precipitately.

This victory closed the administration of lord Grey, who was suddenly recalled to England; and soon had to answer charges brought against him by his enemies, of oppression, bribery, correspondence with the king's enemies, and the sacrilegious destruction of churches.—Instead of waiting the issue of a trial, he sought mercy by an abject submission of his life and honour, to a prince incapable of shewing mercy. He pleaded guilty to his indictment, and was beheaded.

The removal of this unfortunate deputy, gave new courage to those who opposed the government. The Irish chieftains of Ulster, once more resolved to draw

the sword against the abettors of heresy. They were joined by Murrough O'Brien, who had just succeeded to the Irish sovereignty of Thomond. But sir William Brereton, to whom Grey had entrusted the government, marched to meet their united forces, assembled in Westmeath, and the enemy dispersed.

These repeated defeats, produced a general despondency among the Irish. Several monasteries were resigned into the king's hands, and the prior of Christ church consented to have his community changed into that of a dean and chapter.

O'Brien of Thomond made his submission. The earl of Desmond renounced the privileges hitherto claimed by his family, consented to attend parliament, and abjured the authority of the pope. Some other English lords followed his example; and sir Anthony Saint Leger, who was now made deputy, assumed the reins of government, at a time when the executive power was more respectable than ever.

A. D. 1541. The Irish parliament now conferred on the king, the title of king of Ireland, for hitherto, the English monarchs had only assumed the title of lord of Ireland. On the part of the king, a number of peerages and promotions were granted with unusual favour.

The deputy had now only to concert measures for governing the new subjects. In Munster and Connaught, which had formerly been divided into counties, and inhabited in a great part by English settlers, but where the laws had been disused for 200 years, the authority of government was immediately asserted. Some ordinances were made by parliament for the regulation of these districts, not entirely consonant to English law, but such as might tend to the gradual reformation of

those, "who as the act expresses it," were not so perfectly acquainted with the laws, that they could at once live and be governed by them; the most material of those were, that laymen and boys should not be admitted to ecclesiastical preferment; that murder and robbery be punished by a fine, half to be paid to the king, and half to the chieftain of the district; that wilful murder be punished capitally; that noblemen be allowed no more than 20 cubits, or bundles of linen in their shirts; and that persons of inferior rank, be limited in proportion; that none be allowed to dye their shirts with saffron, under a penalty of 20 shillings; that those into whose country a theft is traced, must trace it thence or make restitution.

No attempts were as yet made to introduce a new system of jurisprudence into all parts of the island, but a number of commissioners were appointed for each province, to exercise the office of the ancient Brehons.

The earl of Desmond, Uliac de Burgo, Murrough O'Brien and O'Nial now repaired to Henry's court, renewed their declarations of obedience and allegiance, and were most graciously received; de Burgo was made earl of Clanricarde; O'Brien, earl of Thomond; and O'Nial, who promised to assume the English habit, manners, and language, and obey the English law, was created earl of Tirowen.

An unusual degree of peace seemed now to have spread over the kingdom, and all the practises of Francis I. to seduce the Irish into revolt, were ineffectual. On the other hand, Henry was attended to Calais by a considerable body of Irish forces; and to such lengths was loyalty carried, that when a son of Fitzpatrick, baron of Upper Ossory, had committed some treasonable offence, he was delivered up to public justice by his own father.

Fifty-five laws passed in eight sessions, of the reign of Henry VIII. are printed.

EXERCISES.

What was agitating the rest of Europe at this time? What means were taken to introduce the reformation into Ireland? What success attended its introduction? By whom was it principally advocated, and by whom opposed? What proceedings did parliament take? Who were declared incompetent to sit in parliament? What was the nature of the commission sent over by the pope? Who took up arms to defend the pope's claims? Where and how were the Irish defeated? What was lord Grey's fate? What occurred in Ireland on his removal? What followed sir William Brereton's dispersion of the Irish? What title was conferred by the Irish parliament on the king? What return did the king make? What measures were taken for the improvement of the kingdom? Who of the English and Irish chieftains repaired to the king? What was now the state of the kingdom? What instance is given of its loyalty?

CHAPTER IV.

Chieftains of Leix and O'Fally reduced—Measures taken to extend the use of the liturgy—Accession of Mary.

A. D. 1547. ON the accession of Edward VI. the English council sent over Bellingham, an experienced commander, with 600 horse and 400 infantry, to support the government in Ireland: his arrival was very opportune, for O'Moore of Leix, and O'Connor of O'Fally had appeared in arms, and spread disorder through the province of Leinster; their forces, however, were quickly routed, and their chieftains, after having been for some time reduced to the condition of fugitives, were taken and thrown into prison, their lands were de-

clared to be forfeited, and were conferred on English proprietors.

Bellingham was now entrusted with the government, and while he was actively employed in repelling the attacks of the Irish chieftains, those of the English race, who envied his power, or disliked his administration, formed factions against him, and he was removed. On the death of his successor, Sir Francis Bryan, Brabazon was chosen deputy by the council, but as the English

A. D. council was resolved to extend the use of the reformed liturgy into Ireland, Sir Anthony
1550.

Saint Leger, as a man of abilities and experience, was made lord deputy, with instructions to convene a parliament; this, however, was postponed, and the royal proclamation was addressed to the clergy, enjoining the acceptance of the new liturgy; this was violently opposed by Dowdal, archbishop of Armagh; he was a native of Ireland, and had on the death of Cromer been appointed by Henry, in defiance of the pope's nomination of Robert Wauchop; he was supported in this opposition by almost all his suffragans, while Brown, archbishop of Dublin, with the bishops of Meath, Kildare, Leighlin and Limerick, declared their acceptance of the king's order, and

A. D. the liturgy was soon after read in Christ church in the presence of the deputy, magistrates, and clergy.

1551. gy. The steady opposition of Dowdal and his clergy on the one hand, and on the other the perseverance of the reformers under the auspices of royal authority, raised apprehensions of disorder, which necessarily induced a cautious and vigilant administration of civil affairs; and such was the comparative tranquillity of the whole kingdom, that there appeared a prospect of establishing the reformed religion, if the court of England had been sufficiently attentive to this object, and the king's govern-

ment in Ireland strong enough to abolish the Brehon law, and to extend the English code through every part of the kingdom ; urgent representations were made to the English minister of the necessity of this measure. For whatever were the overtures of the Irish in former reigns, when the settlements of the English were evidently spread through their country, yet on the revival of their power in the reigns of Edward II. & III. they became confirmed in their attachment to their ancient manners, of which they were now particularly tenacious. This adherence to their ancient manners and institutions, was the great obstacle the Irish viceroy had to overcome in his attempts to preserve the different inhabitants within the bounds of peace and submission. On the death of the earl of Clanricarde, his followers proceeded to elect a captain of their sept, under pretence of the illegitimacy of the earl's son, while the young lord chose to assert his right by force of arms, rather than by a tedious and precarious appeal to the lord deputy. In like manner, on the death of the earl of Thomond, his legal successor, the baron of Ibracken, was, by the turbulence of his brothers, Daniel and Turlogh, and the factious clamours of his sept, compelled to nominate a tanist according to ancient usage; and Daniel O'Brien was raised to this dignity.

But the principal distress of the English government in this reign, arose from the factious disorders of the great northern family of O'Nial, who kindled in Tirowen a flame of war, which, though it subsided at intervals, was not extinguished for many years.

A. D. In the mean time, the death of Edward VI.
 1553. confounded all the efforts which had hitherto
 been made to introduce the reformation into
 Ireland.

The officers of state were, on the accession of Mary, confirmed in their several departments. No violent changes were as yet attempted in the religious establishment, a licence only was published, as in England, for the celebration of mass without penalty; and among the royal titles, that of supreme head on earth, of the church of Ireland, continued to be inserted in the acts of state.

Mary restored the family of Kildare to all its estates and honours, in the person of Gerald Fitz Gerald. Charles Kavanagh was created a peer by the title of baron Balyan, and was by the same patent nominated captain of his sept, so that though he was made a lord of parliament, still he was to exercise the ancient jurisdiction over his followers. O'Connor, chieftain of O'Fally, was set at liberty, and returned to Ireland. Dowdal, who had in the reign of Edward VI. abandoned his diocese, was now restored; for ages the question of precedence had been agitated between the sees of Dublin and Armagh; whether appeals should be brought in ecclesiastical causes from one diocese to another, or where the final sentence should be pronounced, were points of less moment, than whether the primate of Armagh should have his crosier carried erect within the jurisdiction of his rival. The decisions of popes and councils had been pleaded by both parties; at length it had been decided that each should be entitled to a primatial dignity, and erect his crosier in the diocese of the other; but that the archbishop of Armagh should be stiled primate of *all* Ireland, while the archbishop of Dublin should be contented with the title of primate of Ireland. This had been reversed in the last reign, in favour of Browne archbishop of Dublin; but Dowdal now resumed the dignity of primate of *all* Ireland.

Sir Anthony Saint Leger, who had been employed to

introduce the reformation, was now the deputy, under whose auspices it was to be abolished,

Dowdal was the chief agent on this occasion; and by his zeal and activity, those clergy who had in the former reign, been the warm advocates of the reformation, and such as had, under the sanction of law, renounced a life of celibacy and married, were removed from their preferments.

When religious ordinances were settled, Saint Leger and his successor, Fitz Walter earl of Sussex, had leisure to repress those disorders which were perpetually arising in one part or other of the kingdom. The old Irish inhabitants of Leix and O'Fally could not patiently submit to the claims of the new settlers. Having taken up arms, numbers of them were cut off in the field or executed in cold blood; and the whole race would have been extirpated, had not the earls of Kildare and Ormond interceded with the queen, and by becoming suritics for their peaceable behaviour, rescued a few from impending danger.

A. D. Persecution was now raging in England, and Sussex was ordered to convene a parliament, for 1556.

the purpose of giving a legal sanction to the overthrow of the reformation. On the meeting of this assembly, the deputy presented it with a bull from Cardinal Pole, which was read aloud by the chancellor, kneeling, and received by the lords and commons in the same humble posture. This bull represented the separation of Ireland from the papal see as the effect of fear rather than free will: it pronounced absolution to all for this offence: it ratified all ecclesiastical proceedings, during the schism; it secured the possession of church lands to those who had been invested with them, but gave a gentle admonition to restore what might be necessary for the support of parsonages and vicarages, and enjoined

the parliament to abrogate all laws enacted against the supremacy of Rome.

The parliament began with declaring that the queen had been born in lawful wedlock, and repealed all former acts to her prejudice; they ratified all the provisions of the bull transmitted by Pole, repealing all acts made against the holy see since the 20th of Henry VIII.

Besides the acts relating to ecclesiastical matters, others were passed for the civil government, one granting a subsidy for the special purpose of enabling the queen to expel the Scottish islanders, whose numbers were so formidable, and outrages so dangerous, that it was declared high treason to invite them into Ireland or to entertain them, and felony to intermarry with them. In compliment to the queen and her consort, Leix and O'Fally were denominated the king's and queens' counties, and were vested for ever in the crown; and Sussex was empowered to grant estates or leases in them at his pleasure; the chancellor was empowered on the prorogation or dissolution of parliament, to direct a commission under the great seal, for viewing all the towns, villages, and waste grounds of the kingdom, and reducing them into counties.

A law was also passed for the explanation of the famous act of Poynings—it was enacted, that no parliament should be held or summoned in Ireland, until the chief governors and councils should certify the causes and considerations, and such acts and ordinances as they judged proper to be enacted; that when these were approved and returned under the great seal of England, a parliament should then be summoned for the purpose of passing such acts, and none other; but as events might happen during the sitting of parliament, necessary to be provided for, the chief governors and council were authorised to certify such other causes and provisions; af-

ter the summons and meeting of parliament, as they shall think good to be enacted; which, and no others, shall be passed in every such parliament, if agreed to by the three estates. This was the act which finally determined the usage of holding parliaments and enacting laws in Ireland.

During the remainder of Mary's reign, the O'Nials carried on a civil war uncontrolled by the deputy; in the west the Scottish adventurers were driven with great slaughter out of the kingdom. In Thomond, the violences of Daniel O'Brien in endeavouring to dispossess his nephew, and hold his possessions in right of tainistry, were so great, that the deputy was obliged to interpose; the nephew was declared earl of Thomond, and consented to hold his lands as an English subject; he and all his freeholders swore allegiance to the king and queen in the most solemn manner, and renounced the name of O'Brien to the utter mortification of his Irish adherents. "He accepted the title of earl," say the Irish annalists, "but gave up the dignity of Dalcais, to the astonishment and indignation of all the descendants of Heber, Heremon, and Ith."

The laws of Philip and Mary, are 15 passed in one session.

EXERCISES.

What force did Bellingham bring over? What took place in Leix and O'Fally? For what purpose was sir A. Saint Leger sent over? Who principally opposed the introduction of the liturgy? Where was the liturgy read? What would have enabled the deputy to have established the reformation generally? What was the chief obstacle the deputy had to overcome in preserving the public peace? What occurred on the death of the earl of Clanricarde? What principally distressed the government at this time? What occurred on the accession of

Mary? What noble family was restored? What archbishop? What was the dispute between the archbishops of Armagh and Dublin? What occurred in Leix and O'Fally? What orders were given for the overthrow of the reformation? In what manner was the bull from Cardinal Pole received? What proceedings were taken in parliament? What law was passed relative to the Scots? What relative to Poyning's law? How did O'Brien of Thomond mortify his adherents?

CHAPTER V.

Accession of Elizabeth—Conduct of John O'Nial—Restoration by Parliament of the reformed worship—Transactions in Ulster.

A. D. ON the accession of Elizabeth, Sussex, who had retained Ireland in comparative quiet, with 1558. a small force, was continued in his office.

Daniel O'Brien still prosecuted his claims to the chieftaincy of north Munster, and incessantly annoyed the earl of Thomond; while the earls of Ormond and Desmond lived in a state of rivalry and enmity, dangerous to the public peace. The west was harrassed by the feuds of the de Burgos. In Leinster, the survivors of the old families of Leix and O'Fally watched every favourable opportunity of assailing those new inhabitants, amongst whom their lands were distributed.

In defiance of the letters patent, which had created his father a peer, and by which his lands were confirmed to his illegitimate son Matthew, John O'Nial had been acknowledged chieftain of this extensive district, and claimed the sovereignty of all Ulster. Sir Henry Sydney, who governed in the absence of Sussex, marched northwards to terrify this chieftain, and from Dundalk

summoned him to appear and explain his conduct—O’Nial considered, that obedience to this summons would be looked on by his followers as a mark of abject submission; he therefore returned a message full of duty to the queen, and respect to her governor, and requested that Sydney would honour him with a visit, and be sponsor to his child. Sydney thought it expedient to comply, and attended John O’Nial, who entertained him in rude magnificence. He acknowledged that he had opposed the succession of Matthew’s children, but he added, it was well known, that this Matthew was illegitimate, and that if he resigned his pretensions to such a son, still, more than one hundred persons of the name of O’Nial would assert the honour of their family against the usurpation of any spurious race; that the letters patent, on which the claim was founded, were in effect vain, for his father Con, by the ancient institutions of his country, could claim no right in Tirowen, but during his own life; and could not change his tenure, without consent of all the lords and inhabitants of this territory. Or if the cause should be determined by English law, it is the known course of this law, that no grants can be made by letters patent, until an inquisition be previously held of the lands to be conveyed; but no such inquisition had been held in Tirowen, which had not known the English law, nor had ever been reduced to an English county. Were it insisted, that the inheritance should descend in succession to the rightful heir, he was that heir, as eldest of the legitimate sons of Con. But his pre-eminence was derived from an origin more glorious, the free election of his countrymen; an election even practised, without any application to the English government, and thus invested, he claimed only those rights which a long train of predecessors had enjoyed, and which were so ascer-

tained as to render the interposition of the English government unnecessary.

Sydney consulted his counsellors, who were silenced by this reasoning. By their advice he replied, that the points now stated were of too great consequence to receive an immediate answer; that they were first to be communicated to the queen. In the mean time, he advised O'Nial to persevere in a peaceable demeanour, and to rest assured of receiving from the throne whatever should be found right and equitable. The chieftain promised obedience, and they parted in perfect amity.

Sussex now returned to Ireland, with special instructions for establishing the reformed religion. A parliament was assembled, which met on the 11th day of January, the commons were composed of deputies, summoned from ten counties only, the rest, which made up the number seventy-six, were citizens and burgesses of those towns in which the royal authority was predominant. In a session of a few weeks the ecclesiastical system of Mary was entirely reversed, and the reformed religion established by a series of statutes, but not without considerable opposition. Sussex was so alarmed by the opposition he had encountered in this parliament, that he dissolved it in a few weeks, and repairing to the queen, entrusted the Irish government, by her directions, to sir William Fitz William, a person too inconsiderable to enforce his authority among a people who were only to be managed by a deputy of power and consequence, and who were now particularly provoked by the violence offered to their religious opinions. The opposers of the reformation inveighed against the queen and her ministers; many recusant clergy abandoned their churches, which remaining unsupplied by reformed ministers, fell to ruin; the statutes lately made were either evaded or neglected with impunity; the

people were exhorted to assert their religion, and were assured of effectual support from the pope and the king of Spain; the latter of whom was particularly offended at Elizabeth. In the mean time, the chieftain of Tirowen acted in the most extravagant manner; asserting the ancient right of his family to the dominion of Ulster, he ravaged the territories of the neighbouring Irish chiefs, while at the same time, he breathed the most rancorous hatred of the English; one of his followers was hanged on suspicion of being a spy for the government, and he condemned another to the same fate, only for feeding on English biscuit.

Sussex collected troops, and marched into the north; but before hostilities had proceeded to any length, overtures were made on each side for an accommodation. On O'Nial's promise of submission, it was agreed that he should be acknowledged dynast of Tirowen, until parliament should decide on the validity of the letters patent; that if they were declared invalid, he should be created earl of Tirowen, and hold his country by English tenure, still maintaining the ancient prescriptive authority over all those who should be found to owe him vassallage. When the treaty was concluded, he swore allegiance, and then repaired to the queen to renew his submissions at the foot of the throne.

A. D. He appeared in London, attended by a guard of gallowglasses, arrayed in the habiliments of 1562. their country, armed with the battle-ax, their heads bare, their hair flowing on their shoulders, their linen vests dyed with saffron, with long and open sleeves, and surcharged with their short military harness; he was most graciously received by the queen, and dismissed with presents and assurances of favour. This transaction was regarded by O'Nial's followers as a treaty of peace and amity between two potentates; and

the gracious reception of which John boasted on his return, they considered as an acknowledgment of his dignity. On his return, John encountered the Scots, defeated and slew their leader, and so favourable A. D. were the reports transmitted to England of his 1563. conduct, that a member of the privy-council was appointed to execute articles of agreement with him, upon the terms originally proposed; but as the northern chieftain still continued to train his followers to arms and increase his forces; Sussex expressed his apprehensions to the queen, that he meditated some design against her government. "Be not dismayed," said Elizabeth, "tell my friends if he arise, it will turn to their advantage; there will be estates for them who want; from me he must expect no further favour." But the deputy more alarmed, prepared to defend the northern borders of the pale.

Sussex was succeeded by Arnold, who was soon found incapable of governing; and sir Henry Sydney was made governor. To assist him, sir William Saint Leger was stationed in Munster, with the title of lord president, to maintain the public peace. To awe O'Nial, Randolph, an English officer, was stationed at Derry, with a strong and well provided garrison.

The civil and ecclesiastical state of the kingdom was in the most alarming disorder; but the most pressing danger was from the restless O'Nial.

He razed several castles on the borders of the pale, burned the church of Armagh, ravaged the whole district of Fermanagh, and expelled the chieftain, who refused to acknowledge his superiority; endeavoured to prevail on Desmond and the Connaught lords to unite with him, and sent ambassadors to Rome and Spain.

To oppose him, Sydney spirited up all the northern Irish who had been injured by O'Nial. He was thus sur-

rounded by enemies, and his forces were defeated with great slaughter; rendered furious by disgrace, he treated his followers with a barbarous severity; they deserted, and at length O'Nial resolved to throw himself on the mercy of Sydney. He was prevented by one of his attendants, who expressed his fears of the event, and advised him to make overtures to the Scots now encamped in Clanhuby, who, however they might resent his former conduct, were still enemies to the English, and by their aid, he might be enabled to make terms. O'Nial abandoned his first intention. By the persuasion of an English officer, named Piers, who practised on the Scots, O'Nial's proposal was received with seeming satisfaction; he was invited to an entertainment, where in a quarrel intentionally raised, he was assassinated. Piers sent his head to the deputy, and was rewarded with 1000 marks.

By the queen's authority, the deputy nominated Turlogh Lynnaugh O'Nial, grandson to the O'Nial who had married into the family of Kildare, successor to John. He was a man of peaceable dispositions, and was bound by indentures, to renounce the sovereignty claimed by John over the neighbouring lords, and to suffer the sons of Matthew to enjoy their dominions unmolested.

EXERCISES.

Who was deputy on the accession of Elizabeth? Who claimed the chieftaincy of north Munster? How was Leinster disturbed? Who claimed the sovereignty of Ulster? How did O'Nial evade Sir Henry Sidney's summons? What reasons did O'Nial give for maintaining his pre-eminence? What effect had his reasonings on Sidney? What steps were taken to re-establish the reformed worship? Who assembled a parliament for this purpose? How many counties

sent deputies? Why was this parliament dissolved? Who succeeded Sussex? Who offered to assist the opposers of the reformation? How did O'Nial shew his hatred of the English? What compromise was made between him and Sussex? How did he appear in London? What account did he give of his reception? What reply did Elizabeth make to Sussex? Who succeeded Sussex? Did O'Nial remain quiet? What means did Sidney use to oppose him? Why did O'Nial join the Scots? What was the consequence? Who was his successor? On what terms did he hold his lands?

CHAPTER VI.

Feuds between the Butlers and the Ormonds—Parliamentary proceedings—James Fitzmaurice—English colonies.

IN Munster the feuds of the houses of Desmond and Ormond gave the deputy constant occupation in endeavouring to restrain their excesses. Gerald, the present earl of Desmond, or whom the queen wrote, that he "was not brought up where law and justice had been frequented," engaged in a petty war with the Butlers, which ended in his being defeated, wounded, and made prisoner; as the Butlers conveyed him from the field, stretched on a bier, his supporters in triumph exclaimed, "where is now the great lord of Desmond?" he replied, "where, but in his proper place, still on the necks of the Butlers."

These disputes were referred to the queen, who effected an accommodation between the rivals; but new difficulties and controversies arose. The deputy found it necessary to seize the earl of Desmond, who was obliged to attend the queen; he and his brother were committed close prisoners to the tower, and thus confirmed

in a rancorous hatred to the English government, which ended only with their lives.

A parliament was now convened ; the constitution of the commons was particularly offensive to one party ; it was alleged that members not resident in towns where they were chosen, had been returned, and members for towns not incorporated ; that sheriffs and magistrates had returned themselves. After four days spent in clamorous altercation, the judges were consulted, who decided, that those returned for towns not incorporated, and the magistrates who had returned themselves, were incapable of sitting, but that the non resident members were, and that the penalty of electing them should alight on the sheriffs.

This decision left the government a majority, but increased the violence of the opposite party, who were led by sir Christopher Barnewal.

The introduction of a bill for the suspension of Poyning's law was violently opposed, and some days elapsed before any business was transacted ; at length the suspension was agreed to, but it was afterwards provided, that no bill should ever be certified into England for the repeal or suspension of this law, until it had been first agreed on, by a majority of lords and commons in the Irish parliament.

An act of attainder was passed against John O'Nial, and his possessions in Ulster vested for ever in the crown.

Munster was now made the scene of civil war ; sir Peter Carew laid claim to some lands in the possession of sir Edmond Butler. In this proceeding he was justified by the sentence of the deputy. Butler armed his followers and repulsed the intruder. Several of Butler's neighbours, who had been harrassed by his violence, complained to the deputy ; commissioners were appointed

to hear their cause, but he alleged that no justice could be expected from his mortal enemy, and disdained to appear before them. This insolence was the more alarming, as intelligence was received that the king of Spain was practising in Ireland by his agent, Juan Mendoza, to excite insurrections, and that James Fitz Maurice, with others of the Geraldines of Munster, provoked at the imprisonment of the earl of Desmond and his brother, and affecting great zeal for their religion, had been joined by the earl of Clancarthy, taken arms, and sent to the king of Spain to desire assistance. Butler was said to have united with these enemies of his house. Sir Peter Carew was ordered to reduce him, which order he prepared to obey with particular alacrity, and leading his troops against them, at one vigorous onset put them to flight, and pursued them with terrible execution. James Fitz Maurice now prepared to take the field; he first invested the city of Kilkenny, but being repulsed by the garrison, and resisted by the citizens, he turned his fury on the adjacent villages which he plundered, and so little opposition did he meet, that he conceived hopes of overthrowing the English power; with this view he endeavoured to engage Tirlough O'Nial, to make a diversion in his favour, on the northern borders of the pale; and also sent messengers to the courts of Spain and Rome, with assurances, that the enemies of Elizabeth had risen in every part of Ireland, and that some foreign aid only was required, to root out all the adversaries of the holy see.

The alarm, however, of this insurrection, was greater than the real danger, and was soon suppressed by the earl of Ormond, and sir John Perrot, an austere, spirited, and vigorous officer, who was appointed president of Munster. To this province he gave an universal appearance of peace and industry, by enforcing a strict exe-

cution of English law ; for this purpose he held courts in different quarters, where he heard and redressed grievances. The queen had such confidence in this officer, that on his first appointment to the command in Ireland, she permitted sir Henry Sidney to return to England, and entrust the government to his brother, sir

A. D. William Fitz William. At this time a great spirit
1571. of colonization prevailed in Ireland ; sir Thomas Smith, secretary to the queen, obtained a grant

of Irish lands for his natural son. Young Smith led a colony into a district in Ulster, called Ards, where he was soon put to death by the O'Nials, and the hopes of the colony blasted. This failure, however, did not deter other adventurers, and Walter Devereux, lately created earl of Essex, offered to plant a colony in Clan-hu-boy, on condition that he should be invested with a moiety of the country, thus planted, and be commander in chief for seven years.

A. D. Fitz William, who foresaw danger from the
1573. presence of a nobleman vested with an independent authority, and attended by a considerable force, warmly remonstrated against the commission granted to the earl, but the enemies of Essex were anxious for his departure. Leicester the chief of them, prevailed on the queen to quiet the jealousy of Fitz William, by proposing that Essex should receive his commission from the lord deputy of Ireland. This commission was, however, affectedly delayed, and when the earl landed, he found himself harrassed by the northern natives, who received secret intimation, that they might oppose him with impunity. Essex pathetically represented to the queen the distresses of his situation, and was on the point of being recalled, when his enemies at court found new pretences for detaining him in Ireland, to aid the lord deputy, as they alleged, against the

queen's enemies. Essex, after assisting to put down some commotions in the south, returned to the prosecution of his schemes in Ulster, when he was involved in a series of perplexities, by the turbulence of the natives, and the insidious practices of Leicester. Vexation and disappointment soon put a period to his existence. Sir William Fitz William had repeatedly requested to be recalled from the Irish government; the queen at length determined once more to entrust the management of Irish affairs to sir Henry Sidney; he well knowing the difficulties of this office, would gladly have declined the charge; to conquer his reluctance, he was invested with the most honourable and extensive powers, and assured of an annual remittance of £20,000, in addition to the ordinary revenues of Ireland.

A. D. His presence was sufficient to suppress all com-
 1576. motions; and without drawing a sword, he put down every disorder, executed the laws, and administered justice even with severity. Sir William Drury was appointed lord president of Munster, in the room of Perrot, where he acquitted himself with great reputation, and without regard to ancient patents, extended his jurisdiction into every district, without control or opposition.

The great disproportion between the revenue of Ireland, and the charge of maintaining the English power in this country, was a cause of constant complaint in England; to remedy this, Sidney conceived the design of creating a regular revenue, by substituting a composition for a certain rate of provision for the royal garrisons, and the maintenance of the governor's household, furnished by the English districts. This proposition was steadily resisted by the lords and gentlemen of the pale; a remonstrance was sent to the queen, but without effect; the agents who presented the remon-

strance, were committed to the fleet, as contumacious opposers of the royal authority. At length the opposition to this measure gave way, and a composition was settled for seven years.

EXERCISES.

What did the queen say of Desmond? What became of him? What did he say to the Butlers? What complaint was made of the constitution of parliaments? How did the judges decide? What bill was proposed in parliament? Who was attainted? What caused dissensions in Munster? What alarmed the deputy? Who was the king of Spain's agent? Who attacked the city of Kilkenny? What was the result? Who suppressed the insurrection? How was peace secured in Munster? Who attempted to colonize in the north? What offer did the earl of Essex make? Did he fail? Who succeeded sir William Fitz William? On what terms? Who was appointed president of Munster? What means did sir Henry Sidney use to encrease the revenue of Ireland?

RECAPITULATION.

In what year did sir E. Poynings arrive? What interrupted the progress of his reform of the state? How did his campaign against the Irish end? Where did he hold a parliament? Which are the laws most celebrated that were then passed? What was the issue of Warbeck's second attempt? What was the issue of the earl of Kildare's trial? What effect had Poynings's law on the appointment of Kildare to the office of chief governor? What was the nature of the earl's administration? In what year did Henry VII. die? What advice did Wolsey give respecting the government of Ireland? Who was sent to Ireland in consequence? What proof did the people give of their opinion of his administration? How did Francis I. endeavour to embarrass Henry? At what time? How did Francis's attempt involve the earl of Kildare? What gave rise to the rebellion

of lord Thomas, son to the earl of Kildare? How did the Ormond family shew its loyalty during it? What are the principal events of this rebellion? How did it terminate? What was occupying the attention of the rest of Europe, while this rebellion raged in Ireland? What means were taken to establish the reformation in Ireland? In what year was the sanction of parliament called for to aid the reformation? How did this parliament shew its subservieney to the king's wishes? What means did Cromer use to oppose the reformation? Who took up arms to support the Catholic cause? What was lord Grey's fate? What was the state of Irish affairs when sir A. Saint Leger was made deputy? When was the title of king of Ireland conferred? To what extent were the English laws used in the reign of Henry VIII.? Who succeeded Henry VIII.? In what year? When was the reformed liturgy introduced into Ireland? What representations were sent to the English government respecting the reformation at this time? When did Edward VI. die? Who succeeded him? What changes took place in ecclesiastical affairs? In what year was parliament called on to sanction this change? How is the name of Cardinal Pole connected with those proceedings? What explanation did Poyning's law receive? Who succeeded Elizabeth and when? What Irish chieftain proved troublesome at this time? What arguments did O'Nial urge in support of his claims? Who governed Ireland at that time? What occurred in the parliament summoned in 1569? When did O Nial appear in London? How was he attended? What opinion did the Irish entertain of this interview? What was the end of O Nial? On what occasion were the judges consulted by the house of commons? What effect had their decision on the house? Who was James Fitz Maurice? What was his conduct? Who attempted to plant colonies in Ireland, when and with what success? What offers were made to sir H. Sydney, to induce him to take the office of chief governor of Ireland? What proposal of his gave great offence in Ireland?

BOOK THE FOURTH.

CHAPTER I.

Project of Stukeley—Spanish Invasion—Death of Desmond.

THE enemies of Elizabeth now attempted to subvert her power in Ireland. An English adventurer, Thomas Stukely, disappointed in his hopes of obtaining preferment in Ireland, to which he was obliged to retire in the reign of Edward VI. went to Rome, and insinuated himself successfully into the confidence of Gregory XIII. and persuaded him of the practicability of making his son, Jacob Boncompagna, king of Ireland. The pope practised with Spain, and amused Philip with the design of expelling Elizabeth from all her dominions, by first invading Ireland. Eight hundred Italians, whom Philip undertook to pay, were raised, and Stukely, who was to command, created by the pope marquis of Leinster, earl of Wexford and Carlow, viscount Murrogh, and baron of Ross.

At the same time, James Fitzmaurice, who had, on being released from his confinement, retired to the continent, was endeavouring to obtain from France or Spain, assistance to invade his native country.

Elizabeth was informed of her danger, and made preparations both by sea and land to meet it; she was, however, soon relieved from the danger of Stukely's armament. On his arriving at the mouth of the Tagus, he found don Sebastian preparing for his African expedition, and was prevailed on by the Portuguese to join him, promising on his return to accompany the Italians to Ireland in this expedition, Stukely fell with don Sebastian, and

as this event turned the attention of the Spaniard from his design on Elizabeth, she withdrew her navy from the coast of Ireland, and permitted Sir H. Sydney A. D. to resign his government to Sir William Drury 1578. lord president of Munster.

Fitzmaurice had in the mean time, obtained the considerable succour of four score Spaniards, with whom and some fugitives of England and Ireland, he landed at Smerwick, in Kerry. - A ship of war which lay in the harbour of Kinsale, on the first intelligence of the invasion, doubled the point of land, and destroyed the transports; thus cutting off the power of retreat or relief by sea.

They were immediately joined by sir John and James, brothers to the earl of Desmond, with their followers.— The earl himself, though equally disaffected, yet for the present acted with caution and reserve, and pretended to assemble his forces for the service of government.— He summoned to his assistance the earl of Clancarthy, who instantly obeyed the summons, but after his arrival, finding every scheme of operations objected to, he retired in disgust.

Fitzmaurice, however, not satisfied with this duplicity, did not suppress his vexation at his disappointment in not meeting with an open declaration. He expressed also his suspicions of sir John, who, to prove his sincerity, murdered in the town of Tralee his most intimate friend, Henry Davels, an Englishman by birth, with all his attendants but one.

This brutal assassination, however, was of little service to the invaders, whose cause soon became more desperate, by the loss of Fitzmaurice, who was slain by a son of Sir William de Burgo's, in a petty skirmish, in which his antagonist also fell.

Under the guidance of sir John Desmond, who now

took the command, the Spaniards left Smerwick, and were distributed in different quarters in Kerry, where a desultory warfare was carried on against sir William Drury. Nine weeks of constant exertion were spent in vain, in endeavouring to bring sir John Desmond to a regular engagement; two hundred of the deputy's troops were surprised and cut off; and the arrival of six hundred men from England proved a most seasonable reinforcement, while sir J. Perrott, with six ships of war was stationed on the coast, to cut off all assistance from the rebels.

A. D. On the deputy's first marching against the Spaniards, he was joined by the earl of Desmond, but 1581. such suspicions were entertained of this nobleman, that he was arrested; he was however, soon after liberated, having made the most solemn protestations of his fidelity. On his release, he withdrew with his troops, refused again to join the deputy, and secretly encouraged the insurgents.

The deputy having retired on account of ill health, the command of the army, now consisting of 900 foot, and 150 horse, devolved on sir Nicholas Malby. He left 300 infantry, and 50 horse, in garrison at Kilmallock, and with the remainder of his troops, marched to attack sir J. Desmond, who lay in a plain near the abbey of Monaster Neva with 2000 men. The dispositions of the rebel army were made by the Spanish officers, and the attack of the Irish was vigorous and well maintained, but at length the English army prevailed, and the rebels were routed and pursued with great slaughter.

The earl of Desmond now wrote a congratulatory letter to Malby and advised him to withdraw from his present position; but some papers seized in the baggage of the rebels confirmed the suspicions entertained against the earl, and Malby answered by a severe expostulation;

which proving fruitless, he moved to Rathkeal, a town belonging to the earl, who in return attempted to surprise the English camp: Malby having once again endeavoured by expostulation to retain the earl in his allegiance, was preparing to reduce his castles, when the death of sir William Drury put an end to his authority; he distributed his forces into different garrisons, and returned to his own government in Connaught.

The council in Dublin elected sir William Pelham chief governor, who instantly made preparations for renewing the war in Munster. After many ineffectual attempts to reclaim Desmond, he was declared a traitor, if he should not submit within twenty days; and his territories having been made the seat of war, were exposed to the ravages of a necessitous army. The earl made himself master of the town of Youghal, and cut off a detachment sent by the earl of Ormond to recover the town; elated by this success, he sent a letter to sir William Pelham, signifying that he and his brethren had entered into the defence of the Catholic religion under the protection of the pope and the king of Spain, and inviting him to join in that cause; he also addressed similar letters, with more success, to lord Baltinglass and other lords both of the English and Irish race. The success of the earl was however of short duration, and he soon found himself like an abject outlaw, compelled to take shelter in his woods, while his miserable vassals were exposed to daily slaughter and the horrors of famine.

The earl's castle of Carrick-a-Foyle was taken by storm, and other forts were abandoned by his followers. He and his brother John quarrelled, each condemning the other as the cause of their calamities, and Desmond's overtures to government were rejected; in this desperate state he obtained some respite by the arrival of a new governor, Arthur lord Grey, who

waited impatiently at Dublin to receive the sword of government, and Pelham was accordingly recalled.

Grey, who had received orders to shorten the Irish war by vigorous measures, impatient to signalize himself, gave orders even, before he was sworn into office, for the attack of a body of the enemy, who under the Fitzgeralds and lord Baltinglass, with a chieftain of the O'Briens, had taken post in the county Wicklow. The enemy occupied a steep and marshy valley, perplexed with rocks, and winding through hills thickly wooded; in this situation they received and routed the deputy's troops, and he returned to his seat of government covered with confusion and dishonour. In the mean time 700 Spaniards and Italians landed at Smerwick, with arms and ammunition for 5000 men, and a large sum of money. The earl of Ormond who commanded in Munster, marched against the invaders; he was after some minor operations, joined by lord Grey with 500 men, and sir William Winter arrived with his fleet: the fort in which the invaders had fortified themselves was summoned, and a bold and peremptory answer returned by its garrison, that they were sent by the pope and the king of Spain, to extirpate heresy, and to reduce the land to obedience to king Philip who was invested by the holy father with the sovereignty of Ireland. A vigorous sally, in which the Spaniards were repulsed, followed this reply, the next night Winter landed the artillery, and a battery was completed before morning; the fort was again summoned with offers of mercy, but the same answer was returned. The batteries now opened, and in a few days the fort offered to capitulate, but lord Grey refused to grant any terms, to men whom he considered traitors, and the garrison at length surrendered at discretion.

The garrison now found that the refusal to grant them

terms was something more than nominal severity ; the whole were murdered in cold blood : the execution of this barbarous service was entrusted to the celebrated sir Walter Raleigh.

Disastrous as was the issue of this invasion, it served to encourage a spirit of disaffection in other quarters, A. D. and the deputy was obliged to leave the affairs of Munster to inferior officers. Repeated complaints 1581. of the dreadful severity of his government, induced the queen to recall him soon after, and grant a pardon to all rebels who would accept it, except Desmond ; this wretched nobleman, with half a dozen attendants, was pursued with indefatigable vigour, reduced to the greatest want, and dependance on his followers for his daily subsistence. In the utmost extremity of distress, his followers seized some cattle for his use ; the owner exclaimed at this violence, and a few soldiers of an English garrison pursued the prey ; they came to the opening of a valley, in which was a small grove, and here determined to repose, when seeing a light at some distance, their leader, Kelly of Moriarta, a man of Irish birth, ordered one of his party to advance cautiously and discover how many were here posted : he was informed that six persons only were concealed in this retreat. Kelly and his party rushed forwards, but on entering the hut, found the rebels fled, except one man of venerable aspect stretched languidly before a fire. The leader assailed and wounded him ; he exclaimed, " spare me, for I am the earl of Desmond." Kelly smote off his head, and brought it to the earl of Ormond, by whom it was conveyed to the queen, and impaled on London bridge. Thus was a family extinguished which had for four centuries flourished in rude magnificence, and had often proved too powerful to be governed. The earl's enormous domains were now forfeited to the crown.

EXERCISES.

How did Elizabeth's enemies attempt to overthrow her power in Ireland? What did the pope expect to accomplish? What titles did he confer on Stukely? How did James Fitzmaurice employ himself on being released? What prevented Stukely from pursuing his design? Who succeeded sir Henry Sidney? What assistance did Fitzmaurice obtain? Where did he land? What became of his transports? Who joined him? Who pretended to oppose him? By what conduct did sir John Desmond shew his zeal in James Fitzmaurice's cause? What became of James Fitzmaurice? Who opposed sir John Desmond? On whom did the command of the army devolve? What conduct did the earl of Desmond pursue? Whom did he defeat at Youghall? What message did he send to sir William Pelham? Was Desmond successful? Who succeeded sir William Pelham? Who defeated the deputy in Wicklow? Where did the Spaniards land? What answer did they make when summoned? What followed this reply? What became of Desmond?

 CHAPTER II.

Sir John Perrot chief governor—Descent of the Scots—Armada—University founded—Conduct of Tirone.

A. D. THE fall of the earl of Desmond left Ireland free from any considerable disorder. The government was now entrusted to sir John Perrot, a man universally esteemed for his impartial administration of justice, one who had long studied the interests of Ireland, and whose policy was liberal and benovolent. He published a general amnesty, and assurance of pardon and protection to all who should return to their allegiance. He marched into different parts of the kingdom, and was every where received with professions of submission; he divided several districts into counties, and appointed sheriffs and other officers for them; he proposed to the English council an extensive plan for the improvement of Ireland, but he did not receive the necessary support for its execution.

A. D. He convened a parliament in Dublin. By this time it seemed to be a mark of confidence in the chief governor for parliament to consent to the suspension of Poyning's law, and which it was in some sort disreputable not to obtain. This was, however, strongly and successfully opposed by a party who apprehended some scheme of extraordinary taxation.

The deputy was now called into the north by a descent of the Scots; they were soon defeated and their captain, who had formerly sworn allegiance, was executed as a traitor. Perrot returned to Dublin, attended by Sorleboy the old Scottish chieftain, who submitted and renewed his engagements to government. An Englishman meanly insulted this old man on the misfortune of his son, who had been executed, and pointed exultingly to his head placed on a pole; the Scot viewed the spectacle with stern composure, and turning to his insulter, said: "My son hath many heads." But all Perrot's efforts for the reformation of the kingdom, could not secure him from the attacks of the discontented. As the establishment of an university had become a favourite object, he proposed to dissolve the cathedral of St. Patrick's, and convert its revenues to this purpose. This scheme kindled the implacable resentment of Loftus, archbishop of Dublin. The deputy's enemies represented his conduct in the most exceptionable point of view, and were heard with too much attention in England. He, however, continued to administer his government with zeal and fidelity, until at last, after a variety of mortifications, he petitioned the queen to be recalled and relieved from a burthen, which the perseverance of her subjects of the English race had rendered intolerable, and whom, by restraining their oppressions of the natives, he had provoked beyond all possibility of reconciliation. Elizabeth consented to appoint a successor;

but as the Spanish invasion was now threatened, Perrot took care before his departure to summon to the capital a number of lords and chieftains, who might be suspected of favouring a foreign enemy, and exhorted them to give the fullest assurances of loyalty by delivering hostages to government; being convinced by him of the propriety of this measure, they consented: he then resigned the government to sir William Fitz William, and embarked for England, with the cordial acclamations of the lower orders of the people—old Tirlaugh of Tirowen, bathed in tears, followed him to the water side.

A. D. The corrupt, ignorant, and illiberal policy of the
1588. new governor, soon destroyed the seeds of tranquillity, confidence and good order which had been sown by his predecessor. On the defeat of the Spanish armada, seventeen ships of that fleet, containing about 5400 men, were driven by storm on the north and north-west coasts of Ireland, where they were received as kinsmen by the Irish—the earl of Tirowen was suspected of having entered into a formal treaty with the Spaniards; others of the Irish lords avowed their attachment to the cause of Spain with less reserve. O'Ruarc the chieftain of Breffrey, pressed Don Antonio de Leva, who, with 1000 Spaniards, were cast on his territory, to remain and declare war against Elizabeth: the Spaniard declined engaging in such an enterprise, and set sail, but his ship foundered within sight of the Irish coast, and the whole crew perished. O'Ruarc fled into Scotland, was delivered to Elizabeth and executed. Mean while, reports were circulated that vast treasures brought by the Spaniards into Ireland, were secreted in the places where they had been entertained. The deputy, fired with the hopes of making himself master of this wealth, tried every means without effect, of discovering the place of its concealment.—In the vexation of

disappointment, he imprisoned and treated with great severity some chieftains in whose possession it was supposed this treasure lay. This conduct of the deputy, together with other circumstances of injustice, which were practised on different families, confirmed the Irish chieftains in their aversion from the English government. They combined to oppose the admission of sheriffs and other officers into their respective counties. When Fitz William intimated to the chieftain of Fermanagh that he intended to send a sheriff into that district, Macguire answered, "your sheriff shall be welcome, but let me know his erick, (or fine) that if my people should cut off his head, I may levy it upon the country." The conduct of the earl of Tirone had been in many instances such as to make government very suspicious of his intentions; still, however, he dissembled so well, as to allay the jealousies entertained of him: he allowed his country to be divided in counties and baronies. A composition for purveyance was established in Munster for three years; thus the queen had the satisfaction of finding every province of Ireland disposed to contribute to the augmentation of her revenue.

During the interval of tranquillity which followed, the university of Dublin was founded, into which students were first admitted on the 9th of January, 1593.

A. D. A strong spirit of dissaffection to the English government now manifested itself among the northern chieftains; some petty hostilities took place; still Tirone thought it prudent not to declare himself openly. On the other hand, O'Donnel proceeded to acts of open hostility, and declared that he would consider Tirone as his enemy, if he hesitated any longer to join his countrymen. On the death of Tirlaugh O'Nial who had governed his sept as an Irish chieftain, Tirone, who had secured Tirlaugh's sons, assumed the title of

O'Nial; this he justified, by declaring that he did it to prevent any of the sept, less favourably disposed to the English government.

Fitz William having been recalled, he was succeeded by sir William Russel, son of the duke of Bedford—on his arrival Tirone repaired to Dublin, pretending that the injustice of Fitz William had hitherto prevented his appearance in the capital, complained of the injuries he had received from the malicious representations of his enemies, and made the most zealous professions of devotion to the queen; some of the council who knew the earl, proposed to arrest him; this was, however, over-ruled and he was dismissed, to the great dissatisfaction of the queen's ministers in England.

EXERCISES.

What conduct did sir John Perrot adopt to restore peace? How did parliament act? Why was the leader of the Scots executed? What was his father's reply to the Englishman? How did sir John Perrot exasperate the arch-bishop of Dublin? Why did sir John Perrot petition to be recalled? What measures did he take to insure the fidelity of the lords of the English race, and the native chieftains? By whom was his departure regretted? Who was the next governor? What was his conduct? How did the Irish receive the Spaniards when driven on their coast by storm? What did O'Ruarc urge Antonio de Leva to do? What was the fate of O'Ruarc? Why did the deputy imprison the Irish chieftains? What was Mc'Guire's reply? When were students first admitted into the university? Who appeared in hostility in the north? What was the conduct of Tirone? Who succeeded sir William Fitz William? What complaint did Tirone make? What was proposed by some of the council? Was the proposal agreed too?

CHAPTER III.

Military operations—Tirone proposes a truce—Hostilities renewed—Sir J. Norris removed.

THE deputy now proceeded to relieve an English garrison, which was besieged in the castle of Enniskillen by O'Donnel; he soon learned that his expedition was too late; that the troops detached to the relief of the castle were defeated by O'Donnel; and that the garrison had surrendered and were put to the sword.—The English garrison of Beleek met the same fate; and to complete O'Donnel's triumph, he was enabled to establish his associate, one of the de Burghos, chieftain of a district in Connaught, by the title of Mac William: while Bingham, the lord president of Connaught, had no military force to oppose these outrages.

The queen's ministers were now convinced that it was necessary to act with vigour in Ireland. The deputy received directions to detach O'Donnel from Tirone, if it was possible.—2000 veterans, and 1000 men lately raised in England, were sent to Ireland, as was also sir John Norris, an officer of distinguished reputation, to conduct the military operations. Tirone, alarmed by these preparations, and knowing that his countrymen were to be retained only by the appearance of activity and valour, on pretence of some injuries received from the English soldiers at Blackwater, attacked that fort, and expelled the garrison. He next wrote letters to the earl of Kildare, endeavouring to exasperate him against the government, and dispatched emissaries into Spain to solicit aid: on the other hand, when the English forces were advancing, he wrote letters to the deputy, professing his submission and attachment to the crown; imputing his late conduct to neces-

sity, for self-defence. But Bagnal, his brother-in-law, and inveterate enemy, by intercepting his letters, gave him a pretence for continuing his hostilities.

Tirone invested the castle of Monaghan, in which there was an English garrison; the attempts of Norris to relieve it brought on some skirmishes, in one of which Tirone was in great danger; he was unhorsed by Sedgrave, an English officer. Tirone when falling, caught his antagonist, and brought him to the ground. Sedgrave, who had still the advantage, prepared to dispatch him, when the earl thus prostrate and incumbered, saved himself by plunging a dagger into the body of his opponent.

The temporising policy of the queen, who was impatient to disengage herself from the disorders of Ireland, suspended these petty hostilities: a commission was sent over, empowering Wallop, the secretary at war, and Gardiner, the chief justice, to treat with Tirone and his associates. The northern Irish refusing to attend the commissioners at Dundalk, a conference was held in the open field; Tirone first, and then his associates explained their grievances, and what they required; some of their allegations were allowed to be just; but on their being required to lay down their arms, repair the forts they had demolished, receive sheriffs into their districts, discover on oath, their transactions with foreign princes, and beg pardon for their present rebellion—discerning the weakness of government in making these overtures, they rejected them with disdain, and broke up the congress, consenting only to a truce for a few days. This conduct, and the emissaries of the northern chieftains, now kindled the flame of war in the other provinces.

To oppose so many enemies, the English army, though lately reinforced, was quite inadequate, and was badly

provided ; their general was mortified at finding himself so ill supported, engaged in a country to which he was a stranger, and in a species of war to which he was unaccustomed ; while the lord deputy betrayed the most dishonourable envy of his character and authority, and studied to distress and control him.

Though Norris was of opinion that the hostilities of the Irish had been provoked by several instances of oppression, and was inclined to lenient and conciliating measures, yet at the expiration of the truce, he marched with the deputy to the borders of Tirone, with a force so terrifying to the enemy in that quarter, that the earl abandoned the fort of Blackwater, set fire to the town of Dungannon, and without sparing his own house, destroyed the adjacent villages, and then retired into the woods. Tirone and his principle associates, were condemned in a regular procedure, and proclaimed traitors, but the distress occasioned by their having laid waste the country, obliged the lord deputy to return ; having first stationed garrisons at Armagh and Monaghan, the latter of which had been reduced, and was now abandoned by the enemy ; sir John Norris was left with part of the army to prosecute the war.

Winter now approached, and the Irish covered themselves in their retreats ; no enemies appeared, and Norris kept his post without seeking them out. The northern Irish now reflected calmly on their enterprise ; Spain had not sent any succours, and an able general with a considerable force opposed them ; they determined, therefore, by dissimulation to gain time, until foreign assistance should arrive. The most penitent letters were dispatched to the queen. Tirone made such representations to Norris, as confirmed him in his former sentiments of moderation, and he even felt compassion for this apparently injured lord.

The queen, pleased at any prospect of composing the disorders of Ireland, empowered Norris, and sir Geoffrey A. D. Fenton, his Irish secretary of state, to pardon all rebels, who should with due humility seek her 1598. royal mercy. At a congress held at Dundalk Tirone implored the queen's pardon. "upon the knees of his heart," as he expressed it, and confirmed his sincerity by the most solemn imprecations. The terms formerly offered were accepted. O'Donnel, Macguire, O'Ruarc, and others, agreed to similar articles, and made the same submissions.

This treaty had been but just concluded, when the chieftains repented of it. The king of Spain, though he could not spare a force to invade Ireland, was yet anxious to encourage opposition to Elizabeth there.

Three pinnaces arrived from Spain with ammunition, and letters from Philip to the Irish chieftains, exhorting them to persevere in their opposition to the English power, and assuring them of immediate support. Tirone transmitted his letter to the lord deputy and council, to demonstrate his fidelity; and at the same time, conveyed assurances of a speedy invasion to Pheagh MacHugh, chieftain of the sept of O'Birne, and to the principal leaders among the disaffected in Leinster and Munster; all of whom were exhorted to take arms, and unite with the northerns, for the assistance of the Catholic religion.

Meanwhile, Norris marched into Connaught, where several English forts had been seized, and Bingham foiled in all his attempts to recover them; he was joined by the lord deputy, and the enemy was soon reduced; one castle only made any shew of resistance, where the Irish gallantly replied to Russel's summons, that they would not surrender, though his whole army were lord-deputies; and accordingly obliged him to force it by storm. Many pleaded in their justification, that the op-

pression of Bingham had driven them into rebellion ; these charges were received with so much attention, that Bingham, impatient to justify his conduct, hurried into England without licence. The queen refused to hear him, and committed him to prison ; from thence he was conveyed to Connaught, in custody of sir Conyers Clifford, who was appointed to succeed him, as lord president of this province. Commissioners were appointed to hear his cause, where his accusers had an opportunity of proving their allegations. He was, however, acquitted and restored to favour.

Tirone now recommenced hostilities, and Norris marched towards Ulster—but again a commission arrived for treating with the earl ; he renewed his professions at another conference, a report of which was made to the English ministry, and while the commissioners waited for instructions, hostilities were suspended. In the mean time, Tirone trained and exercised his men, augmented his forces, and concerted schemes of insurrection with other septs. Every day gave him fairer prospects of success : so that when instructions arrived for holding a final conference, he started new difficulties ; complained of breach of promise on the part of government. When pressed not to reject the last offers of mercy the queen would deign to make, he replied that he had little hope of the performance of any articles ; that the intentions of the general had been ever just and honourable, but had been fatally counteracted by the deputy ; and as sir John Norris was to be speedily removed, and the grievances of the northerns to be submitted to a new chief governor, whose character was entirely unknown, he had the less reason to expect a favourable conclusion of their differences.

The earl's intelligence was correct, the English ministers, ignorant of the difficulties Norris had to encoun-

ter, were astonished that such a commander had not gained more important advantages in Ireland. The earl of Essex, the queen's favourite, had been the rival, and was the enemy of Norris. By his practices, a new lord deputy, lord Burgh, was sent to Ireland, with full powers, both in civil and military affairs. On his arrival, sir John Norris was abruptly ordered to his government in Munster, where he sunk under the anguish of disappointment and disgrace, and died suddenly in two months.

EXERCISES.

Who besieged the castle of Enniskillen? Was it taken? What directions did the deputy receive? What troops were sent to Ireland? Who commanded them? How did Tirone act? Who intercepted his letters? What danger was he in? How did he save himself? How did the queen act? Where was the conference held? What were the demands of the English commissioners? Were they rejected? Was sir John Norris supported by the deputy? What was Tirone's conduct? Where did he retire to? What caused the deputy to return? Where did he place garrisons? What was the conduct of the northern Irish? Where was the conference held? What was Tirone's expression? Who submitted? Did they repent? Who encouraged them to oppose the queen's government? How did Tirone act? How was Norris employed? What was the answer of the Irish garrison to Russel? Who was accused of oppression? What became of Bingham? What was the earl of Tirone's reply to Norris? Why was sir John Norris recalled? Who was appointed governor? What became of Norris?

CHAPTER IV.

Military Operations—Retreat of Clifford—Tirone pardoned—Bagnal defeated—Appointment of Essex.

LORD Burgh had been instructed, and was resolved, to prosecute the war with vigour. He granted, how

ever, at the instance of Tirone, a truce of arms for one month ; this interval he employed in collecting his forces, and concerting his operations ; several lords of the pale attended his standard with their followers, and sir Conyers Clifford was ordered to march his forces through Connaught, and meet the deputy at Blackwater.

Tirone acted on his part with equal vigour ; he lay with his main body strongly entrenched near Armagh. Tyrrel, an Englishman by descent, his associate, was sent into Leinster with 500 men, to incite the disaffected septs to make a diversion in that province ; while his emissaries in Connaught animated the malcontents to oppose the progress of Clifford.

The commencement of hostilities was favourable to the Irish. A son of lord Trimbleston's was detached with 1000 men to attack Tyrrel. The experience of this leader supplied his deficiency in numbers ; he defeated the royalists, and sent their commander, a prisoner to O'Nial, as Tirone was now called.

Clifford, with a body of 700 men, was surrounded on his march by 2000, and was obliged to retreat ; this he did with so much judgment, that, though incessantly harrassed in a march of 30 miles, he regained his quarters without any considerable loss.

Burgh, undaunted by these disasters, marched into Ulster, and, after an obstinate resistance, drove the enemy from their entrenchments, forced his way to Blackwater, and took the fort. The enemy again appeared, and renewed the attack ; and were not repulsed without loss and danger. The deputy having placed a garrison in the fort, resolved to pierce to Dungannon, the chief residence of Tirone. But the sudden death of lord Burgh relaxed all military operations. The earl of Kildare, who succeeded to the command of the army, deemed it expedient to secure the ground already gain-

ed : he did not long survive the deputy ; his two foster-brethren had been killed in rescuing him from the enemy ; he pined with affliction for their loss, and died lamenting their fall.

The council appointed sir Thomas Norris, lord president of Munster, as a temporary successor to lord Burgh. But at sir Thomas's request, the queen formed a new administration. The civil government was committed to Loftus, archbishop of Dublin, and chancellor, and to sir Robert Gardiner, chief justice. The military was entrusted to the earl of Ormond. So alarming were the disorders of Leinster, that Ormond remained in that province ; while sir Henry Bagnal was detached to the borders of Ulster, to awe the northerns, and support the garrisons of Armagh and Blackwater.

But Tirone had recourse once again to negotiations and professions : and after many conferences and stipulations, his pardon passed the great seal ; at the same time O'Ruarc, the principal insurgent in Connaught, submitted to Clifford ; and promised for himself and his followers, the most faithful allegiance to the crown. The queen had soon the mortification to find that O'Nial's submission was merely nominal ; he now attacked the fort of Blackwater, but the place being obstinately defended, he determined to reduce it by famine. Bagnal received orders to relieve the fort, and marched towards it with 4500 foot, and 600 horse. At the distance of three miles from Blackwater, he encountered the northern army consisting of 4500 foot and 500 horse. The generals on each side were enflamed with the greatest enmity against each other. In the heat of the engagement, an explosion of some powder threw the English into confusion : this was immediately succeeded by the death of Bagnal who was shot through the forehead. Tirone obtained a complete victory, 1500 soldiers and 13 officers of the royal army

were slain on the field of battle. The Irish had 200 killed and 600 wounded, and became masters of all the artillery, ammunition, arms, and provisions of the vanquished. Blackwater immediately surrendered; and the royalists, who fled for shelter to Armagh, were obliged to evacuate that town.

This victory produced effects which threatened to put an end to the English power. The illustrious O'Nial was every where extolled; the spirit of disaffection and resistance spread over the kingdom; and O'Nial dispatched emissaries to the king of Spain, magnifying his successes, and requesting succours. It was now believed that Philip intended to invade England, and that he destined 12,000 men for Ireland: the queen's council, therefore, determined on sending an experienced general, with a formidable army, to recover her majesty's power in Ireland. The earl of Essex was appointed lord lieutenant with more than usual powers, and was furnished with 20000 men, a force greater than had ever been sent into Ireland, and such as was conceived by those who were strangers to the country, to be irresistible. These preparations, however, did not dismay the insurgents; and Tirone made his dispositions for carrying on the war. Essex began his administration in such a manner as to raise a suspicion that his object was to strengthen his own influence. Contrary to the queen's directions and remonstrances, he made his friend, the earl of Southampton, general of horse, and continued him in this command; he lavished the honour of knighthood, then highly esteemed, on all whom he thought worth purchasing to his party. His instructions were to strike directly at the northern rebels, and to plant garrisons at Loughfoyle and Ballyshannon, so as to surround them with his forces; but he marched to the south. Tirone was, in the mean time, indefatigable; he stationed par-

ties at Loughfoyle and Ballyshannon to oppose the English; he received ammunition from Spain; and in conjunction with O'Donnel, hired a body of Scots to strengthen their forces, now amounting to 9000 foot and 1400 horse. When Essex returned with his enfeebled and diminished army, he had the mortification to find that 600 of the queen's troops, had in his absence been shamefully defeated by the sept of O'Birne. The report the earl now made of the state of Ireland, afforded the most melancholy prospect; he represented the disaffection as general, arising from an aversion to both the religion and government of England; and that, though the arms of England should in the end prove successful, the contest must be the work of great care, expense, and time.

Clifford was ordered to draw his forces to Beleek, in order to make a diversion on that side, while Essex, now reinforced with two thousand men from England, made his grand attack. Clifford marched with 1500 foot and 200 horse; but O'Ruarc issuing suddenly from an ambush in the mountains, attacked the party in a difficult situation, threw them into confusion, and killed one hundred and twenty, among whom Clifford and some officers fell at the first onset. O'Ruarc pursued the victory until driven back into the woods by the horse. The loss in this encounter was trivial compared to the impression it made on the minds of the soldiers: the English levies shewed the utmost reluctance to march through a strange country where they were liable at every step to be surprised by the enemy, and deserted in considerable numbers; while the Irish loyalists, despising an unsuccessful general, united with their countrymen.

Essex now wrote to England, that the whole number of forces under his immediate command, amounted to no more than 4000 effective men; that all his intended en-

terprises must necessarily be suspended ; and that, therefore, he could draw towards the borders of Ulster only 3500 foot and 300 horse. With this force he marched ; but Tirone, who beside his expectation of assistance from Spain, knew that the most effectual mode of ruining his opponent's army was by protracting the war, proposed a parley, and after some difficulty, obtained an interview with the earl. A ford, near the principle town in Louth, was the place appointed. While Essex, with the statelines of a superior, stopped on the bank, the chieftain plunged into the river, as if impatient to cast himself at the feet of this illustrious commander. For a long time their interview was private, during which it is supposed that O'Nial, who was a man of great address, flattered the extravagant schemes of ambition of Essex, particularly as one Thomas Lee, an intimate of Tirone's, was busily employed the night preceding the conference, in passing between the two generals and holding private interviews with each.

When witnesses were called up on both sides, the conference was opened in form ; the conditions on which Tirone said the northerns would return to their allegiance were, a general amnesty, a free exercise of religion, the restoration of their lands, and an exemption from English government. Essex promised to transmit their demands to the queen ; and a truce was agreed on for a week.

EXERCISES.

What were lord Burgh's instructions? How did he employ the interval of peace? Where was sir Conyers Clifford ordered to meet him? Where was Tirone stationed? Who was his associate? On what mission was Tyrrel sent? Who attacked him? With what success? What checked Clifford? What was he obliged to do?

What were lord Burgh's proceedings? What fort did he take? What put a stop to his success? Who succeeded him? What were the earl of Kildare's measures? What caused his death? Who succeeded lord Burgh? What did sir John Norris request? What appointments were made in consequence? Where did Ormond remain? Where was Bagnal sent? Who submitted to Clifford? How did Tirone try to reduce the fort of Blackwater? Who attempted to relieve it? Did Bagnal fail? How did Tirone act after this victory? What were supposed to be the intentions of the king of Spain? How did Elizabeth act? Who was appointed lord lieutenant? What force was sent to Ireland? How did Essex proceed? Who joined Tirone? What troops did he hire? What report did Essex make? Who checked Clifford? What was the consequence? What did Essex write to England? How did Essex and Tirone meet? What conditions did Tirone demand? What truce was agreed to?

CHAPTER V.

Queen's displeasure—Appointment of Mountjoy—Capture of Ormond—Issue of base coin.

THIS accommodation with an enemy who had so often proved unfaithful, was extremely mortifying to the queen: she did not impute the earl's conduct to any deficiency of spirit, but apprehended some scheme not yet unravelled; before she had heard of the truce, she addressed a letter to the Irish governor and council, in which she enlarged on the misconduct of the war in terms of resentment and indignation, which made a deep impression on Essex: as he attributed the queen's anger to the practises of his enemies, he burst into the most extravagant menaces of revenge. His intention, which he had entertained some time, was to march into England with his army, and execute his vengeance by force of arms; the temperate counsels of his friends restrained his violence, and he suddenly departed with a few gentlemen only in his train.

Scarcely had Essex returned to England when fresh supplies of money and ammunition arrived from Spain, accompanied with assurances of a powerful reinforcement from that country. With these supplies arrived don Mattheo Oviedo, a Spanish ecclesiastic, on whom the pope had conferred the title of archbishop of Dublin; he was the bearer of a hallowed plume from the Roman pontiff to the prince of Ulster, as Tirone was called. Animated with this flattering mark of attention, Tirone declared himself the champion of the holy faith. After the expiration of the first period of the truce, he recommenced hostilities, and published a manifesto, exhorting his countrymen to forsake the cause of heresy, and to unite with him in that, of the liberty of their country and the catholic religion.

A. D. To oppose an active and general spirit of resistance to the English power, with a dispirited and 1600. shattered army, Charles Blunt, lord Mountjoy, was appointed deputy. This selection was very agreeable to Tirone and his associates, who mistook the refinement of Mountjoy's manners for effeminacy. His instructions were the same as those given to Essex, to plant garrisons at Loughfoyle and Ballyshannon, and at other posts in the north. But the very day after his arrival, intelligence was received from the earl of Ormond, that Tirone lay with a considerable force in the western part of Munster, and was so surrounded by the royalists, that he could not possibly escape except by the western borders of the pale; so that if the deputy should march to that point he would have an opportunity of bringing him to an engagement with advantage. Mountjoy marched to Mullingar, where after expecting the enemy for some time, he learned that Tirone had contrived to pass the river Inny, and fled into the north

with a precipitation which shewed his terror of the royalists.

This unexpected escape raised suspicions in the mind of the deputy, of neglect, if not of treachery. It was reported that Tirone had practised with the earl of Clancarde in particular; a circumstance, however, soon occurred which turned those suspicions on a more distinguished character. Sir George Carew, in passing to his government in Munster, accompanied by the earl of Thomond, was informed by the earl of Ormond at Kilkenny, that he was on the next day to have a conference with O'Moore the principal insurgent of Leinster; both were invited to accompany him: they consented, but could not prevail on Ormond to take with him as strong a force as they thought necessary. Leaving his troop of horse two miles in the rear, he advanced with only 17 men to meet O'Moore, who awaited him with a complete band of pike-men, leaving his chief body, consisting of 500 foot and 20 horse, in an adjacent wood: Carew, disliking the place and the behaviour of the enemy, pressed Ormond to retire; after a long and fruitless conference with O'Moore, and while he was engaged with one Archer, a Jesuit, O'Moore's troop gradually surrounded his company, and seized the earl; Carew and Thomond with difficulty escaped. Ormond remained a prisoner, nor could his troop be prevailed on to attempt his rescue. As Ormond had always acted with great circumspection, this incautious conduct gave rise to suspicions, that he had formed a scheme of delivering himself into the hands of the rebels.

Mountjoy having sent detachments into different quarters, and supplies to several garrisons, marched northwards, where he found Tirone entrenched between Newry and Armagh; he attacked the northerns vigorously, and, after some resistance, drove them into their woods.

At the same time intelligence was received that sir Henry Dowkra, who commanded 4000 men sent to Loughfoyle, had made good his landing, and was fortifying the city of Derry; these reverses made a great impression on the minds of the Irish; numbers joined Dowkra, and many of the principals applied to the deputy for pardon and protection. The progress of several dissaffected septs in Leinster recalled Mountjoy to that quarter, where he made successful excursions against the enemy, and in order the more effectually to reduce them, the fields of corn were destroyed in every direction, by which means, those who survived the sword, became a prey to famine.

On the approach of winter, the deputy reappeared on the borders of Ulster, again drove O'Nial from his entrenchments, and destroyed his works. On the return of Mountjoy, the earl made a last effort to oppose him at Carlingford, but here he was repelled with considerable loss, and his reputation among his countrymen entirely overthrown.

The expense of maintaining the Irish war had gradually encreased to the annual amount of five hundred thousand pounds, and as the army was paid in sterling money, England was drained of a considerable sum, a great part of which passed into the hands of O'Nial and his associates, either taken by force of arms, or received in exchange for provisions: with this money the Irish procured from the continent regular supplies of arms and ammunition, and thus carried on war against the queen with her own treasure. To remedy this, and to reduce the expense of maintaining the army, the queen ordered base coin to be sent into Ireland, and there to be taken as sterling money; strictly prohibiting the importation of any other species into Ireland, and decrying those already current there: this had the desired effect

in distressing the rebels, but it also created great murmuring among the soldiers, as all traders took care to raise the prices of their commodities, and a great quantity of spurious coinage flowed in from every quarter.

At the first intimation of this measure, Mountjoy, who dreaded its effects, marched the army to the northern borders; and without engaging in any enterprise of moment, kept Tirone in perpetual alarm. But new incidents soon called him into the south.

EXERCISES.

Was queen Elizabeth satisfied with the accommodation with the Irish chieftain? What did Essex do? Who sent supplies to Tirone? Who came from Spain? With what authority from the Pope? By what title was Tirone called? What did he assert was his object? Who succeeded Essex? Why did this appointment please Tirone? What were the deputy's instructions? What intelligence did he receive from Ormond? How did Tirone escape? Who did the deputy suspect? Were his suspicions well founded? Who accompanied Ormond in his conference with O'Moore? What was the event? Where was Tirone entrenched? What was the result of Mountjoy's attack? Who landed at Loughfoyle? Was he successful? What effect had this upon the Irish? Where did Mountjoy march? By what means did he conquer? What did he do on his return to Ulster? At what expense did the queen carry on the war in Ireland? In what way was this expenditure most injurious to England? What means were used to remedy this evil? What was the effect?

CHAPTER VI.

State of Munster—Spanish invasion—Carew marches against O'Donnel—Reinforcements arrive to each side.

WHEN sir G. Carew had entered on the presidency of Munster, he was furnished with only 3000 foot and 200 horse, a force greatly disproportioned to the numbers of

his enemies, had they acted with union and in concert—Carew, taking advantage of the different views and interests of their leaders, soon succeeded by representations and promises, to neutralize one, and to bring over another. The titular earl of Desmond, alone refused to come to any accomodation; he would not resign his claims to the title and estates of Desmond, and these the queen was determined not to grant; to secure his person, the president tampered with O'Connor, the son-in-law of the late earl of Desmond, and by his means, the titular earl was actually seized; but before he could be delivered into Carew's hands, he was rescued. The lord president framed several other plots for securing the person of the earl, and the assassination of his brother.

But Carew did not confine his operations to plots and negociations; he took the castle of the knight of the valley, as one of the Geraldines was fantastically called; and in Kerry, the castle of the lord of Lixnaw, who died of grief in consequence; all his excursions were attended with the most dismal havoc.

Taking advantage of the tranquility thus obtained, courts were held and the laws administered with justice and regularity.

Assurances were now spread through Ireland, that the long expected Spanish succours were speedily to embark; and that Munster was to be the scene of their invasion. O'Nial, who at the same time received a flattering letter from the pope, renewed his exertions with fresh vigour, and dispatched emissaries in every direction. These reports received little credit in England, until intelligence was received, that the Spanish fleet consisting of 50 sail, 17 of which were ships of war, were seen to the north of cape Finisterre, steering for the coast of Ireland. Two thousand troops were then

sent from England, and 3000 more were prepared, for the service of Munster.

On this alarming occasion, the lord president and deputy met in Leinster to concert their operations. Carew had always resolved to maintain Cork, and now received intelligence from sir Charles Wilmot, who commanded there during his absence, that the Spanish fleet had appeared before the mouth of the harbour; another express informed him, that the wind slackening, the fleet had tacked about, and were now at anchor in the harbour of Kinsale. It was suggested that the deputy should return to Dublin, to collect his forces, and expedite the necessary supplies of amunition and provisions for the southern war; But Carew urgently represented, that the betraying a consciousness of weakness by retreating before the invaders, might encourage the dissaffected to revolt; that the forces could be collected by the deputy's officers, and that the magazine of Cork could supply the army for three months; this advice prevailed, and Mountjoy marched to Cork, as if fully prepared to meet the Spaniards. While one part of the Spanish forces was driven by storm into Baltimore, the main body, commanded by don Juan d'Aquila, general of the expedition, entered Kinsale without resistance, the English garrison retiring at their approach. Dispatches were sent to Tirone and O'Donnel, the two leaders who had invited the Spaniards, pressing them to join their allies; while Oviedo and other ecclesiastics encouraged the southern chieftains to declare for the invaders. The provincials of Munster were, however, so reluctant to engage in fresh hostilities, that several waited on the deputy, with the strongest assurances of their loyalty, while others in a state of neutrality, seemed to await the issue, and be decided by it.

The Spaniards, who had come with the hope of find-

ing the whole kingdom ready to join them, now found themselves without aid, in an inconsiderable town, and besieged by a regular force. The invaders had occupied the castle of Kincorran, standing on the river of Kinsale half a mile distant from the town—this was violently assaulted, and after an obstinate defence, surrendered. Intelligence was now received of the approach of the northern army, that O'Donnel with his troops had already penetrated into the territories of Ormond, and was followed by O'Nial with the flower of the Ulster army. It was instantly resolved to divide the royal army. The deputy continued the siege with one body, while the lord president marched against O'Donnel with another.—Carew engaged in this service contrary to his own judgment; he foresaw what happened.—Taking advantage of a hard frost, his enemies, who had kept themselves concealed from him in woods and morasses, passed rapidly into Munster over a mountain, otherwise impassable, and the president returned to Kinsale after a fruitless expedition.—To console Mountjoy for this disappointment, sir Christopher St. Laurence came to his assistance with some forces of the pale; the earl of Clanricard also arrived with a troop: the earl of Thomond, who had been sent into England, returned with 1000 men; 2000 infantry and some cavalry were landed at Waterford; and admiral sir Richard Leviston arrived at Cork with 10 ships of war, 2000 infantry and military stores.

Notwithstanding this reinforcement, it was determined not to attempt the town by storm until the besieged should be further reduced. Castlepark, another adjacent fort, was attacked, and taken, and the besiegers advanced in their approaches, defeating every attempt of the Spaniards to oppose them.

Hitherto, the chieftains of Munster had looked on without interfering ; but now six Spanish ships arrived at Castlehaven and landed 2000 troops with stores, ordnance and ammunition ; six other vessels, they declared, had sailed with them, and had been separated from them in a storm, and that additional troops were preparing for embarkation—O'Donnel immediately joined these new invaders ; Tirone had penetrated into munster ; all the Irish, and several of the English race in Kerry and Desmond, all from Kinsale and Limerick westward threw off the mask of submission, and declared for the Spaniards ; several forts of great military importance were put into the hands of the invaders, and O'Nial lay within six miles of the besiegers camp, and cut off all intercourse with Cork.

EXERCISES.

What force had sir George Carew ? What means did he adopt to promote tranquillity ? Who refused to come to any accommodation ? Who seized the titular earl of Desmond ? Was he put into Carew's power ? What plots did Carew form ? Whose castle did he take ? What assurances were now sent from Spain ? What part of Ireland were the Spaniards expected to invade ? What reports were now spread ? What was the number of the Spanish fleet ? What troops were sent from England ? Who met in Leinster ? For what purpose ? Where did the Spanish fleet anchor ? What advice did Carew give the deputy ? Was this advice followed ? What dispatches were sent to Tirone and O'Donnel ? What part did the southern chieftains take ? How were the Spaniards situated ? What intelligence did they receive from Tirone and O'Donnel ? Who continued the siege ? Who marched against O'Donnel ? Did he fail ? Who brought forces to assist the deputy ? What plan was adopted to insure conquest ? What forts were taken ? What induced the southern chieftains to join the Spaniards ? How did Tirone and O'Donnel act ?

CHAPTER VII.

Desperate state of the queen's army—Defeat of the confederates—Surrender of Kinsale—Submission of Tirone—Death of the queen.

THE besiegers were now surrounded by enemies, and prevented from foraging, while their men, weakened by hunger, and the toils of a winter siege, were dying on their posts—numbers of them deserted, and their English supplies were slowly and scantily furnished; thus circumstanced, nothing seemed necessary for their complete destruction, but that their enemies should continue obstinately in their present situation. Tirone, aware of this, strongly opposed giving the chance of a battle to an enemy, who was only to be saved by some desperate act of valour; but Don Juan, captivated with the brilliant prospect of victory, sent the most pressing instances to his associates to advance, and Tirone having reluctantly consented, the united Irish and Spanish troops marched against the English camp.

While the president remained to conduct the siege, Mountjoy, with 1200 foot and 400 horse, marched against the allies; and as the besieged Spaniards did not suspect that the English would make so bold an attempt, they kept within their walls, leaving the besieged only one enemy to encounter. The first division of the Irish which met the English troops retired; they were pursued, halted, and offered battle; but were, after a short resistance, put to flight: the next division commanded by Tyrrel made some resistance, but was also soon broken; and the Spaniards were left to the swords of the enemy; they, however, after an ineffectual resistance, fell in the field, except a few, who with their general, Ocampo, were made prisoners. The main body, commanded by O'Nial

was discomfited with equal ease; and the reere, in which O'Donnel was stationed, fled without striking a blow.

By this victory, obtained with little loss, the storm which threatened the English was at once entirely dissipated. The Irish forces sought safety in flight, and Don Juan, conceiving himself to be betrayed by men who could be so easily routed, desired a parley, and capitulated—the town of Kinsale, and all posts held by the Spaniards were ceded; but when Dunboy, the fort of Berehaven, was on the point of being delivered up, Daniel O'Sullivan, who had resigned it to the Spaniards, provoked at their capitulation, and disdaining to acknowledge their right to divest him of his ancient property, surprised the fort, disarmed the Spanish garrison, and resolved to defend it against the English. Don Juan, shocked at this obstacle to the fulfilling his engagement, offered to reduce Dunboy before his departure; but this offer was declined, and Carew made himself master of it after an obstinate resistance: after the English had gained the upper part by storm, the governor, Magaghghan, when mortally wounded, made a desperate attempt to fire some barrels of powder, and at once to destroy both friends and foes; but this attempt was defeated and the castle was demolished by the assailants.

In the south, the expectation of another Spanish invasion, kept alive for some time the spirit of resistance; but the dispositions of Carew were so judicious, that this province was soon reduced to a state of tranquillity.

In the northern province, Mountjoy prosecuted the war against Tirone with unremitting vigour; so closely was the earl pursued, that he set fire to his town of Dungannon, while the deputy, by building two new forts, excluded the chieftain from his own territories. The vicinity of the royal army prevented the Irish from procuring provisions, and thousands became a prey to fa-

mine. Reduced to the lowest state of distress, O'Nial made overtures of accommodation, to which Mountjoy, dreading another war and invasion, listened favourably. The manner in which the earl should be treated, became a matter of debate in the English cabinet; several dispatches arrived to Mountjoy, each ordering different terms to be offered to Tirone; but while Mountjoy was distracted by this variety of instructions, he received private assurances of the queen's death; by this he was determined to cut off all delays, and conclude an accommodation with the earl. On receiving a safe conduct, the chieftain attended the deputy, and subscribed his submission, which was conceived in the amplest form; he renounced the name of O'Nial, with all its distinctions and authority, abjured all foreign power and dependency but on the crown of England: the deputy on the part of the queen, promised a full pardon to him and his followers; to himself, the restoration of his blood and honor, with a new patent for his lands, except some reservations, to which the earl consented, for certain chieftains, and the use of English garrisons.

After this accommodation, Tirone accompanied Mountjoy to Dublin, where, on hearing of the queen's death, he burst into a flood of tears; this emotion he attributed to sorrow for a princess who had treated him with so much clemency; it arose more probably from regret at his own precipitate submission.

Had he persevered a few days longer, he might have renewed the war with advantage, or made a merit with the new sovereign, of freely submitting on his accession. As it was impossible to recede, he renewed his submission to the king—No one now remained in arms professing hostility to the English government, which had thus, after a perpetual struggle for four centuries and a half, reduced the whole kingdom to its sway. The following is

ble of prices for the year 1602, authenticated by the signature of John Tirrel, mayor of Dublin, shews what distress as must have been suffered under the famine produced by these civil commotions.

Wheat had arisen from 36 shillings, to nine pounds the quarter.—Barley-malt from ten shillings to forty three shillings the barrel.—Oat-malt from 5 shillings to 22 shillings the barrel.—Pease from 5 shillings to 40 shillings the peck —Beef from 26 shillings and 8d. to eight pounds the carcase.—Mutton from 3 shillings to 26 shillings the carcase.—Veal from 10s. to 29s. the carcase—a lamb from 12d. to 6s.—pork from 8s. to 30s.

Of the reign of Elizabeth 49 laws passed in 10 sessions are printed.

EXERCISES.

What was now the situation of the besiegers? What was Tirone's opinion? Who opposed his plan? Who remained to conduct the siege? Who marched against the Irish and Spanish troops? Which was first attacked? Were they defeated? What became of the Spaniards? Who fled? On what terms did Don Juan capitulate? What was the conduct of O'Sullivan? What offer did Don Juan make? What attempt did Magaghagan make? What became of the fort of Dunboy? Who conducted the war against Tirone? What town did O'Nial burn? What induced him to make overtures for an accommodation? What caused delay? What terms were granted? What did O'Nial renounce? What was promised him? What was his conduct on hearing of the death of the queen? To what was it attributed? How is the distressed state of the kingdom proved?

RECAPITULATION.

Who was Thomas Stukely, and what was his project for the invasion of Ireland? What was the issue of it? Why was sir Henry Sidney permitted to retire and in what year? Who did invade Ireland, with what force, and where did he land? By whom was he openly joined, and by whom was he secretly encouraged? What became of Fitz

Maurice? How did the deputy treat the earl of Desmond? Where was a battle fought? Who commanded the English troops, and what was the issue? What took place between Desmond and sir Nicholas Malby? How did sir William Pelham become deputy, and what were his operations against Desmond? What was lord Grey's first enterprize, and how did it end? Against what enemy did lord Grey next march? What are the particulars and termination of the siege he carried on? What was the earl of Desmond's fate? When was sir John Perrot made lord deputy? What was his character and conduct? What did he propose to the English council? How was it customary for parliament to shew their confidence in the chief governor? What proposal of Perrot's displeased the archbishop of Dublin? Why did he resign, and what was the popular feeling on his departure? What was the character of his successor, and what occurred during his government? What effect had his conduct on the Irish chieftains? When was the university of Dublin founded? What was the state of affairs in Ulster? What steps did the English ministry take in consequence of O'Donnel's success? What was the earl of Tirone's first act of hostility? What system of policy did the queen act on towards Tirone? What was the state of the English army and the opinion of sir John Norris? What circumstance occurred which induced the Irish chieftains to repent, having entered into a treaty with Norris? What was the system on which Tirone now acted? Why was sir John Norris recalled? What were the first military operations on lord Burgh's taking the field? What occurred on the death of lord Burgh? What was the particulars of the engagement between Tirone and Bagnal? In what year did they fight? What were the consequences of this battle? What steps did the English ministry take to remedy the consequences of this defeat? What suspicions did the conduct of Essex create on his first arrival in Ireland? What were the instructions of Essex and how did he commence his operations? How did he close the campaign against Tirone? How did the queen act on learning the particulars of the campaign, and what step did Essex take in consequence? What occurred in Ireland on the retirement of Essex? In what year was Mountjoy sent to Ireland? What were his instructions and what prevented his immediately fulfilling them? What occurred to make the earl of Ormond suspected by government? With what success did Mountjoy conduct the campaign? What induced the queen to issue base coin? Who was at this time lord president of Munster? What was its state when he took the command? In what state was it at the time of the Spanish invasion? What was the strength of the Spanish fleet? When did the main body of the Spaniards land? How did the Irish chieftains of the south act? What military operations commenced? How did the chieftains of the north act? What are the particulars of the expedition undertaken by Carew against O'Donnel? What reinforcements arrived to the deputy and how did he intend to conduct the siege? What reinforcements did the invaders receive? What was now the situation of the queen's troops, and how did they extricate themselves from their difficulties? How did Don Juan act after his defeat? How did the war conclude? When did the queen die?

BOOK THE FIFTH.

CHAPTER I.

*State of the country—Opposition to acknowledging James—
Remonstrance of the pale—Plantation of Ulster.*

A. D. HITHERTO, the hostilities which had disturbed the
1603. peace of Ireland, since the invasion of Henry II. were either the petty broils of rival septs, or the struggles of a people not entirely conquered, to throw off the yoke of their invaders. These struggles, however, were not uniformly between the Englishman and the Irishman; while the deputy of the English sovereign, aided by the native chieftain and his followers, often marched to battle to assert the authority of his monarch, he was still more often opposed by his countrymen by descent, who naturalized to the soil, the customs, and the language of their adopted country, renounced all allegiance to that from which they were descended. Towards the conclusion of the contest, which terminated in the final establishment of the English power, religious prejudices had been called to the aid of national feelings; and when the latter ceased to produce hostility and opposition, the former remained in full activity, to embroil and disunite the inhabitants.

On the accession of James I. the opinion that he secretly favoured the Romish religion, induced the Catholics, in defiance of the penal laws, to restore the Romish worship in its full splendour, in many cities of Leinster, and in all Munster. In Cork, the magistrates refusing to proclaim the king, Mountjoy marched into Munster at the head of an army; the citizens of Waterford refused to open their gates to him, pleading,

that by a charter of king John, they were exempt from quartering soldiers; but on the deputy's threatening to "draw king James's sword, and cut the charter of king John to pieces," he was admitted; they inhabitants swore allegiance, and renounced all foreign jurisdiction. The other cities of the south followed the example of Waterford; and Mountjoy returned to perform the last act of his administration. An act of state was published, called an act of oblivion and indemnity, by proclamation under the great seal. All offences against the crown, all particular trespasses between subjects, committed at any time before the king's accession, were pardoned, and utterly extinguished, never to be revived or called in question; and the whole body of the Irish yeomanry, who, in former times, were left under the despotic power of their chieftains, without defence or justice from the crown, were now received into the king's immediate protection.

Mountjoy, now made lord lieutenant, appointed sir George Carew his deputy, and returned to England, accompanied by the earl of Tirone and Roderic O'Donnel. Both chieftains were favourably received by the king. Tirone was confirmed in his honors and possessions; and O'Donnel created earl of Tirconnel.

During the administration of Carew and sir Arthur A. D. Chichester, the government proceeded in the extension of the law, and the establishment of public justice. Counties were formed, sheriffs appointed, and circuits established. Tanistry and Gavelkind were abolished, and estates made descendible according to the course of the common law of England. Thus in exchange for the Brehon jurisdiction, the native Irish were invested with all the privileges of subjects, and admitted to all the benefits of the English law,

To ascertain the rights of individuals, and settle the possession of all the inhabitants was the next object. A commission of grace, as it was called, issued under the great seal of England, for securing the subjects of Ireland against all claims of the crown. The chief governor was empowered to receive the surrender of those Irish lords, who held estates by a precarious tenure, and to re-grant them on a more permanent security. Many embraced the opportunity of converting their present tenure for life, to an estate in fee, which descended to their children. Every lord, by his new patent, was invested only with the lands found to be in his immediate possession; and his followers were confirmed in their tenures, on condition only of paying him the annual rent, at which his duties were rated, in the place of all uncertain and arbitrary exactions.

Meanwhile, the popish clergy repaired abbeys, monasteries, and churches; and also arraigned the civil administration, and reviewed causes determined in the king's courts. Whatever tenderness James expressed for the tenets of the church of Rome, he abhorred all who maintained the supremacy of the papal jurisdiction. He had published a proclamation in England, commanding all jesuits and other priests, having orders from any foreign power, to depart from the kingdom: by a similar proclamation was the popish clergy of Ireland commanded to depart within a limited time, unless they conformed to the laws of the land. This A. D. produced such a ferment among the recusants, that the governor and council determined on re-1605. viving the penal statutes; several were fined and committed to prison: all the old English families of the pale remonstrated against those proceedings. Their remonstrance and petition for the free exercise of religion was presented, by an unusual concourse, to the

council, on the same day that intelligence was received of the gunpowder plot; this circumstance excited a suspicion in the king's ministers, of some concert between the conspirators in England, and the recusants in Ireland. The chief petitioners were confined in the castle of Dublin, and sir Patrick Barnewell, their principal agent, was, by the king's command, sent to England in custody.

A letter found in the council chamber, intimated a scheme of rebellion, formed by the earls of Tirone and Tirconnel, with other Irish lords and gentlemen of the north. This letter is looked on by many to have been a forgery. It is certain, however, that on the first alarm, Tirone and Tirconnel fled to the continent, and abandoned their vast possessions to the crown; the lands thus placed at its disposal, were further increased by an insurrection, maintained for some time by O'Dogherty A. D. of Innishowen, in the course of which that chieftain fell, and his property escheated to the crown. 1608.

As James affected to derive all his glory from the arts of peace, he resolved on disposing of these lands in such a manner, as might introduce all the happy consequences of peace and cultivation. Aware of the errors in the plantation formed in Munster, on the forfeiture of Desmond, he proceeded with deliberation, and encouraged men of experience and ability to propose their plans; but relied particularly on the counsels of sir Arthur Chichester, a man, whose intimate knowledge of the lands to be disposed of, and the feelings and characters of the old inhabitants, was particularly useful on the present occasion. The Ulster lands were divided among three classes.—1st. English or Scotch undertakers; who were confined to English or Scottish servants and under-tenants.—2d. Servitors, or men who had served

for some years in Ireland ; they were allowed to employ British or Irish under them, provided they were not recusants.—3d. Native Irish, who were allowed to retain servants and under-tenants, without any restriction as to country or religion : the natives were allotted the open and accessible parts of the country : to the British adventurers were assigned places of strength and command, while the servitors were placed in stations of most danger.

As experience had shewn the inconvenience of enormous grants to particular persons, the forfeited lands were divided into three different proportions, one of 2000 English acres, the next of 1500, and the last of 1000, which were distributed by lot ; different conditions were attached to each, according to their size, to secure their cultivation, and the residence of the undertakers. The city of London engaged largely in this plantation, on which they were to expend £20,000, and build the cities of Colerain and Derry. To support a military force, the order of baronets was instituted, each of whom on passing his patent, was to pay into the exchequer, such a sum as would maintain 30 men in Ulster, for three years, at eight-pence per day. The see lands which had in former times been usurped, were restored ; glebes were assigned to the different parishes ; the bishops were obliged to resign all their impropriations, and the tithes paid out of parishes to the respective incumbents ; churches were allotted to each parish ; free-schools were endowed, considerable grants made to the university, together with the advowson of six parishes ; and several towns were incorporated, so as to give them a right of representation in the Irish parliament.

EXERCISES.

What was it constantly disturbed Ireland, since the invasion of Henry II.? What aided these disturbances? What was the opinion of the Irish on king James's accession? What was their conduct? On what grounds did the inhabitants of Waterford refuse to admit Mountjoy? What was Mountjoy's threat? Did they admit him? What act was now passed? Who accompanied Mountjoy to England? How were they received? What title was conferred? Who was left deputy on Mountjoy's return to England? What regulations were now made? What customs and laws were abolished? How was the commission of grace to act? What power was given to the chief governor to grant lands? How were the catholic clergy now acting? What command was issued by king James? What was the consequence of this order? What circumstance excited suspicion in the king's government? Who was taken into custody? Who was detained and sent to England? What letter was found? Who fled to the continent? What became of their possessions? How were the Ulster lands disposed of? Into what proportions were the forfeited lands divided? How was a military force maintained in Ulster? How were the estates of the church regulated? What other regulations were made concerning the university, towns, schools, &c. &c. &c.

CHAPTER II.

Parliament summoned—Lords of the pale address the king—Parliamentary proceedings.

TWENTY-SEVEN years of tumult and distraction had elapsed, since parliament had assembled; it was now deemed necessary to hold one. Seventeen additional counties, and a number of newly created boroughs, which the deputy was every day encreasing, indicated a scheme of general representation, in which the old English settlers, the new British adventurers, and the original Irish, should meet together, to consider of provisions for the public welfare. The recusants apprehended that

the object of this parliament must be either to enact additional penal statutes, or to revive those which had already passed, and from the number of boroughs, they dreaded a majority for the measures of administration. Six lords of distinguished consequence in the pale, Gormanston, Slane, Killeen, Trimbleston, Dunsany, and Lowth, addressed a letter to the king, in which they expressed their apprehensions, from a design of convening a parliament, without any communication to them or others of the nobility ; they prayed that the creation of boroughs might be suspended, till time and traffic should make places fit to be incorporated, and assured his majesty, that if he shall be pleased to repeal the penal laws, he shall settle their minds in a firm and faithful subjection.

The terms of this petition were too bold not to offend a prince, habituated to the most abject flattery ; he pronounced it to be rash and insolent. The deputy continued to increase the boroughs. The recusants now laboured to procure a return of those who were favourable to their party ; and from their success in the counties, anticipated a decided superiority in the commons ; but on the meeting of parliament, they had the mortification to find themselves out-numbered ; of 232 members, 6 were absent, of the remainder ; 101 formed the recusant party ; 125 were protestants ; the lords consisted of 25 temporal peers, and 25 protestant prelates ; of this number, a large majority were friendly to the administration. After the usual speech from the throne, the commons were directed to elect their speaker. The candidates were sir John Davis, the attorney-general, and sir John Everard, a recusant, who had been a justice of the king's bench, and having refused to take the oaths, had retired on a pension. It was contended by the recusants, that several members having been ille-

gally elected, the right of election should be first determined; then to proceed to choose a speaker, by the real and constitutional members of the commons; on the other hand it was contended, that the constant usage was first to elect a speaker, that committees were then to be appointed, and elections examined. On a division being called for, those who voted for sir John Davis, went out to the lobby; the recusant party refused to be numbered, and while their opponents were withdrawn, proceeded, as the majority of legal members, to choose a speaker, and placed Everard in the chair. The other party on their return, exclaimed against this proceeding, declared Davis duly elected, and seated him in Everard's lap.

This scene of tumult ended in the secession of the recusants. Their brethren in the upper house adopted a similar plan, and refused to attend, until the controversy subsisting among the commons should be decided. The deputy finding all attempts to allay the discontents or the opposition fruitless, prorogued the parliament; that the animosities of the opposite sides might have time to subside. The puritans condemned Chichester, for not exercising his authority with necessary vigour; but he felt little alarm at these complaints, as he knew that pacific measures were most agreeable to the king.

The recusant party, now dispatched agents to the English court, to enforce an application they had made at the time of their secession, on the subject of their grievances. These agents were the lords Gormanston and Fermoy, sir James Gough, Hussey, Lutterel, and Talbot; the deputy on his part, sent over the earl of Thomond, sir John Denham, chief justice of the king's bench, and sir Oliver St. John. James received their

complaints with such temper and professions, as inspired them with the greatest confidence. They no longer confined themselves to the late transactions in parliament, but presented nineteen articles of grievances, in the military and civil administration, and entreated the king to send impartial commissioners to enquire into the several particulars. He acceded to this request; and while the commissioners were with a party of the agents on their way to Dublin, sir James Gough, who had travelled separately, arrived, and reported, that the king had commanded him to assure the Roman Catholics, the enjoyment of the free exercise of religion, provided they entertained no priests who should preach the deposing power of the pope.

Chichester, knowing the king's sentiments, gave no credit to Gough's intelligence, and by the advice of the council, committed him to prison. But the recusants expected speedy redress, and were confirmed in this opinion, by the deputy's receiving a summons to attend the king. James, after consulting with Chichester, admitted the recusants to plead their cause before the council; of fourteen returns, of which they complained, two were found to have been illegal, and the burgesses of Cavan and Kildare, declared incapable of sitting. In other particulars, their allegations were pronounced groundless; the king then made a speech, magnified his own equity and impartiality, censured the whole progress of the opposition of the recusants, and commended the conduct of the deputy.

A. D. Parliament now assembled peaceably; and
 1614. owing to the moderate conduct of Chichester on one hand, and Everard on the other, all obstacles to public business were got over, and no bill was proposed that was not passed unanimously; several statutes formerly passed against the native Irish, were

repealed; an act of oblivion was passed; and the proceedings closed with a bill of subsidy, granting to the king and his successors, from every personal estate of the value of three pounds and upwards, two shillings and eight-pence in the pound, from aliens twice the sum; and out of every real estate of twenty shillings and upwards, four shillings in the pound; a grant so bountiful, that James returned thanks in a letter to the deputy. Chichester was now created baron of Belfast, A. D. recalled to England, and succeeded by sir Oliver St. John. The new deputy enforced the penal 1616. laws, with more vigour than his predecessor. Having opposed the usurpations of church lands, by some leading men, complaints poured in against him from all quarters; and the king was requested to appoint commissioners to inspect the state of Ireland, and the irregularities of administration.

About this time Diggs, Crew, Rich, Perrot, and other members of the English house of commons, had made themselves obnoxious to the king, who took this opportunity of mortifying and removing them, by addressing a commission to them to repair to Ireland.

The enemies of St. John, insisting that the commission could have no effect while he continued in the government, lord Falkland was nominated his successor; and the deputy was obliged to resign to two lords justices, until the new governor should arrive.

A. D. Falkland soon found himself in an unpleasant 1622. situation, without a sufficient military force to awe a faction, rendered confident by the dismissal of St. John; and irritated by an inquiry into titles which rendered the property of every man insecure, while the greatest abuses were practised in invalidating old claims. But all his representations were

vain, the king's finances were very low, and the charge of the government in Ireland far exceeded the Irish revenue. To supply this deficiency, was a principal object of the commissioners; they proposed many projects for raising supplies, which were impracticable. Considerable alarm was given by the discovery, that some legal informalities had been omitted in enrolling patents; the whole province of Connaught was affected by this defective state of titles, and adjudged to be still vested in the crown. James listened favourably to a proposal for disposing of it in an extensive plantation, and although every thing could have been proved to have been fair on the part of the proprietors, they judged it to be more prudent to consult the necessities of the king, than to rely on his justice; they therefore offered to purchase a confirmation of their grants, and were about concluding a treaty with James, when his death prevented the king from seeing it carried into effect.

In his reign were two sessions, in which ten laws were passed.

EXERCISES.

How many years had elapsed since a parliament had been held? What addition was made to the places capable of returning members? What apprehensions did the recusants entertain on this account? What was their representation to the king? What reception did it meet? What were the numbers of each party returned? What took place on the house of commons proceeding to elect a speaker? Why was parliament prorogued? What steps did the recusants take on the prorogation? What reception did their deputation meet? Why was sir James Gough imprisoned? How was the objection to the returns disposed of? Who in the opposition assisted Chichester in getting through the public business in parliament? What acts were passed? What subsidy was granted? Who succeeded Chichester? How did St. John make himself obnoxious to some leading men? What was the king requested to do in consequence? Whom did he appoint commissioners, and why? Who succeeded St. John? In what state did Falkland find Ireland? What was the chief object of the commissioners? What discovery was made respecting Connaught? How did the proprietors propose to supply the defect in their titles?

CHAPTER III

Military establishment increased—Voluntary contributions—Wentworth lord deputy—Parliamentary proceedings—Union between the church of England and Ireland.

A. D. 1625. ON the accession of Charles I. the recusants were elated with the hope of receiving greater indulgence than they had hitherto enjoyed ; and as the government of Falkland was mild and conciliating, the Roman Catholic religion was more openly professed. This was highly offensive to the puritanical spirit which was every day increasing ; and such representations were made to the English court, that it was deemed necessary to increase the military establishment to 5000 foot, and 500 horse. As the revenue was unable to support such a force, the king had recourse to prerogative ; he ordered this army to be quartered on the several towns and counties, where the inhabitants were to supply them with all necessaries for three months at each time ; promising at the same time, such favours as should amply compensate for their present burden.

These promises produced instant submission ; and still farther to recommend themselves, both parties proposed on certain conditions, to raise a sum of £120,000, to be paid by quarterly instalments in three years, for the support of the army. The king granted those terms under the name of graces. These were principally a suspension of the penal statutes, and the removal of legal disabilities affecting the recusants ; limiting the

king's title to sixty years, admitting the inhabitants of Connaught to make a new enrollment of their patents. For a further security to all proprietors, their estates were to be confirmed to them by the next parliament, to be held in Ireland, in which, to remove all apprehensions, an act was to be passed for a general pardon.

But in this capital article, which was to have given these graces the same force and stability, with the petition of rights, granted about the same time in England, the king's sincerity appeared at least suspicious. Charles explicitly named the third of November, for the Irish parliament to assemble. Writs were issued accordingly, but the formalities required by Poyning's law for certifying the causes, were not observed; the judges pronounced the writs illegal and void. This irregularity could have been easily corrected, yet no new writs were issued, nor any other time assigned for a legal convention of the Irish parliament.

A. D. The puritans having effected the recall of Falkland, the government was entrusted to viscount 1630. Ely, the chancellor, and the earl of Cork, lord high treasurer. These ministers pursued the recusants with great severity; but were soon informed that their rigour was not acceptable to the king. Considerable embarrassment was now felt in the English councils with respect to Ireland. There were no hopes of maintaining the authority of the crown without a military force; and the time was fast approaching, when the voluntary subsidy would cease. In this situation of affairs, Charles determined on entrusting the government of Ireland to viscount Wentworth, afterwards earl of Strafford, the title by which this nobleman is best known. By skilful management of both parties, a renewal of the voluntary grant was obtained for another

year, until the new deputy should arrive, and concert means for the permanent support of the army.

A. D. Wentworth, who had offended many in Eng-
 1633. land, arrived in this country with strong prepos-
 sessions and prejudices; entirely devoted to the
 king, and ready to carry into execution, with any degree
 of severity, whatever measures was esteemed necessary
 for his master's interests. His first act was to advise the
 council to make an offer of the voluntary contribution
 for another year, and to petition the king to have a par-
 liament called. The hope of a parliament to confirm
 the graces, induced a ready compliance; Charles had
 an habitual horror of parliaments, and now feared that
 the Irish parliament would insist on a confirmation of
 the graces, with which he had no inclination to comply:
 But Wentworth quieted his apprehensions, and it was
 resolved to yield to the request of the nation.

A. D. The object of Wentworth was to obtain a liber-
 1634. al supply, and to evade a confirmation of the
 graces. By great exertions, the deputy pro-
 cured such a return as he wished, in which protestants
 and papists were so equally mixed, that neither party
 appeared predominant: he proposed that two distinct
 sessions should be held, one for providing for the debts
 of the crown and the army, and the other for enacting
 laws and graces for the benefit of the subject: to obtain
 the supply, he represented to the recusants the necessity
 there would be of recurring to the weekly fines on the
 absentees from the established mode of worship, if some-
 thing was not done before the expiration of the voluntary
 contribution; to the protestants he observed, that until
 a regular provision should be made for the exigencies of
 the state, the king could neither refuse the bounty of
 the recusants, nor enforce the penal statutes.

The commons unanimously voted a grant of six subsidies, to be applied entirely at the discretion of the deputy; the lords were not so complying; still the deputy carried his measures with a high hand, refused to confirm the most material of the graces, and after an act of free and general pardon was passed, dissolved the parliament.

At the same time with the parliament, sat a convocation of the clergy; they granted eight subsidies to the king; many grievances under which they laboured were redressed, and a complete union formed between the church of England and Ireland by establishing in the latter kingdom the English articles and canons as the rule of doctrine and discipline. As the policy of Wentworth led him to discourage the woollen manufacture, he in return made the first attempt towards introducing from Holland the linen manufacture, which has since proved so beneficial to the country. His grand object, however, was a western plantation; for this purpose he had opposed the confirmation of the graces, and to accomplish it, used every means to procure juries in the different counties of Connaught to find for the right of the crown; he succeeded in every county but Galway, where the jury refused to find for the crown, and was accordingly severely fined, as was the sheriff for returning such a jury. The severity of this sentence, and violent persecutions of some respectable individuals, were laid hold on by the enemies of the deputy, and such representations were made in England of his conduct, that his friends were scandalized, and trembled for the consequences.

But Wentworth, relying on the favor of his royal master, appeared in London; before the king and council he expatiated on the services he had performed in Ireland; his care of the revenue, the army and the church; the

excellent laws he had procured, and his schemes for the advancement of commerce ; he lamented some particular grievances under which the Irish laboured, with respect to high duties, and the king immediately redressed them ; but when he attempted to apologize for the rigour of his administration, Charles interrupted him with a warm approbation of his conduct ; he desired him to proceed in the work so happily begun, and assured him that it must be acknowledged as the best service which the crown had ever received in Ireland.

The deputy now returned with the same principles, and pursued the same conduct ; individuals suffered severely under his unjust severity in particular instances ; but the country enjoyed unusual tranquility, and the revenue was considerably augmented. Heavy fines were raised on defective titles, though the plan of the western plantation was abandoned. The puritans were offended at the indulgence shewn to recusants. Industry and commerce increased in an unprecedented manner.

A. D. Charles had now deeply embroiled himself with
 1639. the Scots, which in no slight degree increased the difficulties which the Irish deputy had to encounter. The Scots who had been transplanted into Ulster, sympathized with their countrymen in their hatred of the established mode of church government and worship—several of them had taken the covenant and passed secretly into Scotland ; the less active were persuaded that the hour was at hand when their own discipline should be fully established, and resisted the attempts made to reduce them to conformity—in addition to this was the reasonable apprehension of the original natives taking advantage of the present disorders. Wentworth perceived the gathering storm and omitted no means of averting the danger. At the first alarm of the Scottish insurrection, 30,000*l.* were remitted to the king from

the Irish exchequer. The army was reviewed, regulated, and strengthened by an augmentation of 400 cavalry: a body of 500 men carefully disciplined, and well appointed, were at the king's request sent into England to garrison Carlisle, 300 more were destined for Dunbarton, but were anticipated by the covenanters in securing that post.

The earl of Argyle, who commanded for the malecontents in those parts of Scotland which were contiguous to Ulster, opened a communication with the Irish Scots, and sent emissaries to excite them to take arms, but his ships were seized; a plot to deliver up the castle of Carrickfergus to the Scots, was discovered and defeated; detachments were stationed in every place of danger; and magazines provided with arms and amunition for ten thousand foot and one thousand horse.

The king was highly pleased by this conduct of Wentworth, and the judicious advice he frequently gave him; which was not however always followed by Charles.

EXERCISES.

What was the consequence of the mildness of Falkland's government? Who were offended? What caused the increase of the military force? How were they supported? What promise was made? What sum was offered? How was it to be paid? What were the terms called graces? Was the king believed to be sincere? What was said to be illegal? Was parliament assembled? Who effected the recal of Falkland? To whom was the government entrusted? What was their conduct? What embarrassed the English council? To whom was the government now entrusted? With what determinations did Strafford come to Ireland? How did he advise the council? What induced them to comply? What did Charles apprehend? What was Strafford's object? By what representations did he succeed? How many subsidies were granted? What other body assembled at the same time? What union was formed? What did

the deputy discourage? What manufacture did he introduce? What was he anxious to accomplish in the west? Why were the sheriff and jury of Galway fined? What alarmed Strafford's friends in England? What did he rely on? How did he defend his conduct? For what did he attempt to apologize? What was the king's answer? What was the consequence of the deputy's vigour? What offended the puritans? What encreased the deputy's difficulties? What means did he pursue to avert the danger? What sum was sent to the king from Ireland? What number of men? With whom did the earl of Argyll communicate? What did he try to excite them to? What became of his ships? What plot was discovered? What magazines were provided? Was the king pleased with the conduct of the deputy?

CHAPTER IV.

Embarrassments of Charles in England—Parliamentary proceedings—Prosecution of Strafford.

IN the mean time the affairs of Charles became so embarrassed, that Wentworth was directed to commit the government of Ireland to two lord justices, and repair himself to the king. Charles, to mark his confidence and approbation of this zealous servant, created him earl of Strafford, and knight of the garter; and confirmed him in the government of Ireland, by the more honourable title of lord lieutenant.—As the necessities of the king required a more liberal supply of money than he could obtain in England, Strafford offered to return to Ireland, where he assured the king no inconsiderable sources might be found; this offer was accepted, directions were given for convening a parliament, and the indefatigable earl arrived at Dublin two days after it assembled.

A. D. This assembly outran the expectations of Strafford; the puritans, tho' numerous, were not as
1640 yet encouraged by their friends in England to give much approbation; the recusants, whatever were

their grievances and complaints, by no means favoured the cause of the covenanters, and professed the most zealous loyalty and attachment to the king. Strafford had nothing more to do than to levy the parliamentary grants, and raise a new army; but as his presence was necessary in England, he committed to Wandesford, his friend and deputy, the charge of raising the subsidies; to the earl of Ormond he entrusted the affairs of the army; eight thousand foot, and one thousand horse were quickly raised and appeared at Carrickfergus, the place of rendezvous, in good order; the officers and one thousand men, drafted from the old army, were protestants, the rest roman catholics.

But notwithstanding the zealous professions of the Irish parliament, the subsidies by which this army was to be supported, were reluctantly and scantily supplied; every thing now seemed to breathe the spirit of hostility, quite opposite to that manifested in the proceedings of parliament. The English parliament had met, and shown great reluctance to supply the necessities of Charles, and was therefore speedily dissolved. The Irish perceived that attachment to the king was unpopular; the puritan party became every day more powerful and confident, and held a free correspondence with their brethren in Ireland; the ever vigilant Strafford was absent; and the recusants saw the prospect of a favourable opportunity of forcing some attention and indulgence to their civil and religious claims.

In this temper was the Irish parliament on its second meeting; the mode of assessing the subsidies, granted in the last session was particularly obnoxious; from a regard to the king's pressing wants, they appointed the first subsidy to be levied agreeably to the deputy's instructions for that purpose; but declared that the three other subsidies granted, and all future subsidies, should

be raised in what they called a moderate and parliamentary way. The conduct of the ecclesiastical courts, their fees, their commutation money, the demands of the established clergy for christenings, marriages, &c. were fixed on as a grievance striking and obvious, and equally offensive to all parties; they presented a bold remonstrance to Wandesford on this subject, and they were too formidable, and their demands too reasonable to be discouraged; while in other matters they conveyed the most determined opposition in terms of apparent duty and loyalty.

To check this rising spirit of opposition, it was resolved that Strafford should resume the reins of government in Ireland; he was made captain general of the Irish forces, with power to lead them into Scotland. He transmitted to Ormond the necessary orders for this expedition, and prepared for his own voyage; when on the illness of the earl of Northumberland, the king found it necessary to keep him in England; Strafford was very anxious that the Irish army should be employed; he had equal confidence in their bravery and loyalty, but as the insurgents particularly excepted against him, he deemed it imprudent to increase their rancour by directly proposing this measure to the king; other measures were adopted; a cessation of arms was agreed to; and as those who favoured the Scots expressed their abhorrence and apprehension of the popish army raised in Ireland, orders were transmitted for disbanding it; but this could not immediately be done, as there was no money to discharge the arrears due to the soldiers.

In the mean time the Irish commons assembled, with passions still more violent, and a more systematic scheme of opposition; the puritans, encouraged by their friends in England, and animated by the example of the Scots; the recusants smarting with the remembrance of their

mortifications; those who had experienced the severity of Strafford, those who wished to restore the pomp of the romish religion, or establish the simplicity of the presbyterian model, all conspired to oppose the king and persecute Strafford; they began with complaints of those acts which the earl had procured for civilizing the nation; such as the laws which forbade plowing by the tail, burning corn in the straw, or tearing wool from living sheep; a representation was made of the grievances attending such statutes; it was moved that the deputy should exercise a dispensing power, and suspend the penalties annexed to these laws; in explanation of their former declaration relative to the assessment of subsidies, they resolved that no subject should be taxed more than a tenth of his estate; knowing that three of the subsidies were thus reduced to an inconsiderable sum, they affected a serious attention to the king's urgent wants; they ordered the third subsidy to be paid along with the second, six months earlier than it had been made payable by the original grant; the king provoked at this affectation, ordered the leaf in which this order was inserted to be torn from their journals. But the commons were not to be intimidated by this exertion of royal power, their spirit of opposition was cherished by their friends and partizans in England; there the ruin of the earl of Strafford was the favourite object of the popular party; he was already accused; measures were concerted for supporting the accusation; and as Ireland was the scene where this obnoxious governor had been principally distinguished, his prosecutors naturally looked to this kingdom. Here they found a numerous party ready to second their designs; a remonstrance of grievances sustained by the Irish subjects, during the administration of the earl, was hastily prepared and presented to the house of commons; no discussion was allowed, nor ques-

tion put on the separate articles ; all were collected into one question, and voted to be grievances ; the remonstrance concluded with a petition to the deputy, that if he should not think fit to afford relief, he would permit a select committee to repair to the king. Before an answer could be received, this committee was nominated ; the deputy, to evade giving an answer, recommended a conference with a committee of the lords, on the articles contained in the remonstrance ; they rejected this proposal with disdain, and while their committee and agents embarked secretly for England, the deputy prorogued the parliament. The Irish committee were received in London with particular favour by the popular party, who expected considerable assistance from them in working the ruin of Strafford : their public instructions were to apply to the king, but the appointment of a committee of the commons, to take into consideration the grievances of Ireland, prepared the way for their favourable reception with a greater power than the king's, that of the English house of commons : to this committee the agents readily communicated the remonstrance, which, with a petition from several of the knights, citizens and burghesses, was presented to the house. Strafford, contrary to his own sentiments and the urgent admonitions of his friends, relying on the king's promise, repaired to London ; he was impeached, sequestered from parliament, and committed to custody.

The sudden death of Wandesford, lord deputy of Ireland, afforded the Irish committee an opportunity of proving their power. Strafford recommended with particular earnestness that the earl of Ormond should succeed him ; the committee, aided by the earl of Arundel who claimed some lands possessed by Ormond, opposed this nomination with so much vehemence, that the king relinquished the design of employing Ormond, and declared

his resolution of committing the Irish government to two lords justices, equally chosen from the contending parties; lord Dillon of Kilkenny west, a steady royalist, and sir William Parsons, a distinguished puritan. But the committee were too well instructed not to take advantage of the king's condescension; they remonstrated against lord Dillon's appointment; the king again yielded, and abandoned the government of Ireland to sir William Parsons, and sir John Borlase, two violent puritans. The committee now rose in their demands, and obtained his compliance with their wishes in some other particulars; having thus far experienced the weakness of the king, they at length presented their remonstrance in due form: an answer prepared by Sir George Ratcliffe was soon after read in council; they protested against the king's consulting on their affairs either with Strafford, Ratcliffe, or Sir Philip Mainwaring; they were called to make their reply; the discussion of particulars was difficult and hazardous; they agreed to entrench themselves in a general declaration of the sense of the Irish house of commons concerning the grievances alleged; it was prepared; Strafford on his part solicited an enquiry into every particular of the remonstrance severally and distinctly; the committee were not without their apprehensions of such a discussion, and declined presenting their declaration to the king.

EXERCISES.

Why was Wentworth recalled to England? What marks of favour did he receive from Charles? Why did he return to Ireland? In what disposition towards the king did he find the parliament? To whom did he entrust the management of affairs on his return to England? What troops were raised? How were the subsidies paid? What resolution did parliament come to at its next meeting, with respect to the levying those subsidies? Of what did the parliament complain as grievances? Who was made captain general of the Irish

forces, and why did he not take the command? Why was Strafford anxious that the Irish army should be employed by the king? For what reason were orders given for disbanding the Irish army? Why were not those orders executed? With what sentiments did parliament assemble at its next meeting? What statutes did they remonstrate against? What resolutions did they come to respecting subsidies? How did the king shew displeasure at their vote? What was the object of the popular party in England at this time? Where did Strafford's prosecutors look for assistance against him? How did the Irish commons act on this occasion? Who was recommended by Strafford as successor to Wendesford? Why was he not chosen? Who were? What occurred on the Irish committee presenting their remonstrances to the king?

CHAPTER V.

Parliamentary proceedings—Impeachments preferred—Transactions between the king and the committees—Irish troops disbanded.

THE Irish parliament again assembled, and with spirits still more elevated—not content with demanding a redress of former grievances, they aspired to new privileges, advantages and securities. Among other articles, they instructed their agents to obtain an explanation of Poynings's law which should be more favourable to their own views. The lords had now caught the spirit of the other house; they nominated some Irish peers already resident in London, a committee of their house for the purpose of conveying their grievances to the throne. A catalogue of those grievances was prepared and presented to the lords; some articles related to their own privileges; in others they echoed the remonstrance of the commons—these articles engaged the peers in a long discussion. The bishop of Meath moved that in the resolution concerning those grievances, the name of the lords spiritual might be omitted, as they had unanimously voted against it. The judges declared that the act of the majority must be considered as the act of all the orders of the house of peers, and the motion was negatived. The com-

mons were at the same time engaged in critically examining into various instances of illegal practices during the administration of Strafford; to condemn them with greater solemnity, the house framed a number of questions to be considered and decided by the judges, relative to the power of the chief governor and privy council in hearing civil causes, the legality of monopolies, the legal force of proclamations or acts of state, the execution of martial law in time of peace, the jurisdiction of the exchequer, castle chamber, and other courts, the censures and punishments of jurors, and other articles of grievance. These questions were presented to the upper house, and although the lords were moved, and consented to add one question more, yet they discovered no great alacrity in referring them to the judges; the earl of Ormond, in particular, was zealous for prerogative: attached to Strafford, and alarmed at the violence of the commons, he prevailed on the lords to resolve, that the judges should not be compelled to answer such of the queries as concerned his majesty's prerogative, and that they should have time until easter term to give answer to the rest. The commons, unembarrassed by this delay, had them transmitted to their committee to be presented to the parliament of England to have a declaration of the law on the several queries.

The commons proceeded to an impeachment of sir Richard Bolton the chancellor, doctor Bramhal, bishop of Derry, sir Gerald Lowther, chief justice of the common pleas, and sir George Ratcliffe, men of known attachment to the earl of Strafford; Ratcliffe had been already accused by the commons of England, and rendered incapable of giving evidence in favour of his friend. They were charged with high treason, for exercising an illegal and tyrannical government in Ireland with the countenance and assistance of the earl of

Strafford; of assuming a regal power over the properties, persons and liberties of the subjects; pronouncing unjust decrees and extra-judicial opinions, and subverting the privileges of parliament. This vague and general charge was not universally well received by the lords; a variety of questions and points of difficulty were suggested, little suited to the impetuosity of the commons. After a long discussion on many points connected with the charge, it was resolved that **Bramhal** and **Lowther** should be committed to custody; before the other points were arranged, a prorogation suspended the contest between the houses. The trial and attainder of **Strafford** was a consummate triumph to the discontented party: to have been discountenanced or treated with severity by him, was now considered as the most effectual recommendation to honours and employments.

The lords Justices declined to hear any causes in council; the high commission and the presidential courts of **Munster** and **Connaught** were afraid of exercising their wonted jurisdiction; the judges in the law courts were terrified, and a scrupulous adherence to the exact line of law, served to render the administration contemptible to a people hitherto accustomed to a government rigorous and severe. The Irish committee still resident in London, repeatedly solicited the king to grant an answer to their remonstrances, and to redress the grievances which they had laid before the throne. Charles at length consented that they should be considered in the privy council; to most of the articles he gave a favourable answer; he consented that the grievances should be considered by the lords justices and council, and to have a bill prepared for the confirmation of such as appeared most beneficial to the kingdom. A few points were rejected, and he particularly refused that any part of the law of **Poynings** should be repealed.

The committee, not depending on the royal favour, demanded the security of a legal and formal declaration of the rights they claimed. The powers which Charles promised not to exercise, they required to be annulled. Replies, explanations, dispatches sent to Ireland, and answers from the council, caused great delay; without waiting the proceedings of the Irish committee, the king addressed a letter to the lords justices, declaring his pleasure, that the Irish subjects should enjoy the benefit of all his graces, and directing that bills should be transmitted for securing their estates, limiting the crown's title to sixty years, annulling all proceedings against the proprietors of Connaught, and securing the estates of that province from all claims of the crown.

Thanks were returned to the throne, but both lords and commons showed that they were still firm and determined. They prayed that all the graces should be established by law, and that the present parliament should not be prorogued or dissolved until they were confirmed, and every grievance redressed. The proclamations issued for regulating linen yarn, which were the acts of Strafford, were now declared grievances. Every questionable demand of the protestant clergy, a body equally obnoxious to the puritans and papists, was at once pronounced a grievance, with so little discrimination, that the house was afterwards obliged to qualify the rigour of its own resolutions. They next proceeded to consider the university; a committee was empowered to inspect its statutes, and to make a compilation of such laws as they should judge necessary for the government of the college. But in the next session, public disorders became too violent to allow any attention to be given to the government of a college.

In the impeachments, the house proceeded with less violence than before: Strafford had been deprived of any

advantage from the evidence of the impeached lords. Each of the accused exhibited an answer to the articles of their impeachment: but no replication was prepared, or further prosecution attempted.

The Irish forces raised by Strafford for the service of Scotland, had long continued an useless burden to Ireland, and an odious and alarming object to the English commons; the king was unable to discharge their arrears; to disband them unpaid would have been hazardous. The repeated remonstrances of the English parliament made it necessary to disband them; and to prevent any danger, Charles determined on sending them into some foreign service. For this purpose he made arrangements with the Spanish ambassador—orders were transmitted for disbanding them, and Ireland was left to provide the money necessary for this purpose—a sum was raised by the king's friends, not sufficient to discharge their arrears, but such as at present satisfied the soldiery, and the whole body was dismissed without any immediate inconvenience or disorder. Preparations were now made for transporting those forces into Spain, when on a sudden, both the Irish committee in London, and the commons in Ireland, inveighed against this measure—they urged that those forces might be sent back from Spain to raise insurrections in Ireland; that altho' the present king of Spain was in amity with his majesty, yet his grandfather had been too successful in exciting the Irish to rebellion; that many heads of families, attainted in the late reign, were now in the Spanish court, honoured with titles taken from places in Ireland. They might hereafter be appointed to command the Irish troops, and at their head assert their ancient claims, and regain their forfeited inheritances. The parliament, insensible or indifferent to the consequences, adopted the sentiments of the Irish commons, and stopped the

transports provided by the Spanish ambassador: Charles then addressed himself to the lords, but parliament was inexorable.

A session of considerable heat and violence was protracted in expectation of the Irish committees returning with the promised bills; at length they arrived with the bills, for which parliament had so repeatedly and strenuously petitioned; by which the possessions of the subject were insured, and all their capital grievances redressed, so as to give real satisfaction to those who had asserted the rights of the Irish subject with sincerity and integrity.

EXERCISES.

What were the demands of the Irish parliament on their meeting? What particular instruction did the commons give their agents? What proceeding of the commons did the lords adopt? What did the bishop of Meath move? What questions were framed to be decided by the judges? How did the lords act when those queries were sent up from the commons? To what other body did the commons send those queries? Who were impeached, and on what charge? What triumph did the discontented party obtain? What occurred between the king and the Irish committees in London? What orders did the king give to the lords justices? What demands were made in parliament? What became of the impeachments? How did Charles intend to dispose of the Irish troops? By whom was this intention opposed? What reasons were given for this opposition? Why was the sitting of parliament protracted?

CHAPTER VI.

Intentions of parliament—Conspiracy formed—Commencement of rebellion.

A. D. The Irish parliament had separated with a firm determination of pursuing their schemes of re-
1641. formation in a future meeting; but the interval

of their recess proved an important period, distinguished by a desperate conspiracy and insurrection.

The principal agent in fomenting this plot, was Roger Moore, the head of a once powerful Irish family in Leinster. He engaged in his project a kinsman, Richard Plunket, a man vain and indigent; among the northern Irish he practised successfully with Connor Macguire, baron of Inniskillen, Mac Mahon, Philip Riely, and Turlogh, brother to sir Phelim O'Nial. the most considerable of his name and lineage now resident in Ulster. Under pretence of making levies pursuant to the king's permission for the service of Spain, Plunket, Hugh Byrne, and sir James Dillon, were particularly active in raising troops: sir Phelim O'Nial. a more dangerous partizan than the rest, now embarked with them: after some delay and disappointments, they made their final arrangements for the 23rd of October. Some of the leaders, with a few chosen men, were to assemble in Dublin and seize the castle with the arms and stores, and on the same day operations were to commence in the country, where the different leaders had distinct posts marked out, which they were to attack and take; and then, if necessary, detach aid to their associates in Dublin. The 22nd of October arrived, and the lords justices remained ignorant of the state of the country. At length, at the moment of execution, they were made acquainted with the scene about to be acted. Mac Mahon imparted the secret to Owen Conolly in Dublin, on the 22nd, and apprehensive of a discovery from the manner in which Conolly received the information, detained him till a late hour, drinking to the success of the enterprise. Conolly having contrived to elude the vigilance of his host, proceeded in a state of intoxication to sir William Parsons, and informed him of the design, his author, and the principals concerned.

Parsons, prejudiced against his appearance and the manner of his discovery, paid little attention to his story ; but on his departure, he became apprehensive of danger; ordered the castle and city gates to be guarded, and communicated to his colleague the information he had received. Borlase, struck with the narrative, summoned the privy council, and sent messengers in search of Conolly, who was found in the hands of the town watch, by whom he had been seized as a suspicious character: after being permitted to take some repose, he gave a clear and particular account of what he knew : Mac Mahon and Macguire were taken ; Moore, Byrne, and other leaders escaped. Sir Francis Willoughby, governor of the fort of Galway, an experienced soldier, arrived at Dublin on this important evening ; he assured the council that through his whole journey from Galway, the country seemed in a state of profound composure ; but that an unusual number of strange horsemen had all night been pouring into the suburbs, and though denied admittance, still hovered about the city. The council appointed Willoughby to the custody of both the castle and the city ; the castle, in which were deposited fifteen hundred barrels of powder, arms for ten thousand men, thirty-five pieces of artillery, with all their equipage, was defended by eight infirm warders and forty halberdiers. Willoughby lost not a moment in securing a place of such consequence, and did not venture to let down his draw bridge without the attendance of his whole insignificant guard, until reinforced.

In the mean time the defenceless citizens of Dublin were alarmed at midnight with the clamour of treason and insurrection; some affirmed that the Irish were collected at Tarah to the number of ten thousand, others that they were actually in view. Many of the English inhabitants abandoned all hopes of defence, and suddenly

prepared to escape to their native country. A fleet of Scottish fishermen offered to detach five hundred of their crew to the service of the state ; but scarcely had the overture been accepted, when a false alarm of danger drove them from the coast ; four hundred soldiers embarked for the service of Spain, but detained in the harbour by order of the English parliament, were prohibited from landing until they were on the point of perishing by famine ; and then were suffered to disperse through the country. A few days allayed the confusion of the capital ; no intelligence of hostilities had been received but from the northern counties ; dispatches were sent to the lords-president of Munster and Connaught, directing them to provide for defence ; the earl of Ormond was required to repair to Dublin with his troop : commissions were sent by sea to several gentlemen of Ulster, empowering them to prosecute the rebels and to receive those who should submit to the king's mercy.

To prevent any dangerous concourse in the city, the parliament appointed to assemble in November was still further prorogued, and the courts of law adjourned, except that of the exchequer, which remained open to receive the king's rents ; the sheriffs of the pale were ordered to provide for the security of this district, where the power and numerous dependants of the great lords attached to the romish religion, were suspected and feared by government ; nor were these fears allayed, though the lords Gormanstown, Nettervil, Fitzwilliam, Howth, Kildare, Fingal, Dunsany, and Slane, appeared before the council, expressing their surprise and abhorrence of the conspiracy. All, romish and protestant alike, gave solemn assurances of their loyalty, and declared their readiness to concur in the defence of the realm ; but as they were entirely destitute of arms, required to be provided for their own security,

as well as for the annoyance of the enemy ; the justices in a time of danger when the enemies of government and the extent of their designs were not yet discovered, naturally regarded most of these lords with jealousy and distrust : to arm them might be to enable them to join the rebels with greater strength ; yet to deny them arms would be to avow a suspicion of their loyalty ; a middle way was deemed the safest : the council assured them, that they had every reliance on their loyalty, that they would gladly supply them with arms, but did not know what number could be spared ; that some however should. Accordingly a small quantity of arms and ammunition was given to those lords most exposed to danger ; in a few days these lords appeared again ; they expressed a deep concern at the proclamation issued by the state, purporting, that a detestable conspiracy had been formed by "some evil affected Irish papists"; they apprehended that this expression might be interpreted so as to extend to them ; by a second proclamation it was declared that the words Irish papists were only intended to include the mere Irish of Ulster.

To give intelligence to the neighbouring kingdom, sir Henry Spotswood was charged with dispatches to the king, now resident in Edinburgh ; Conolly was the bearer of a letter to the earl of Leicester ; the judges and council declared, that as the lives and fortunes of his majesty's subjects in Ireland, as well as his regal authority are at stake, they must deviate from ordinary proceedings, and urge the necessity of the lord lieutenant's presence in Ireland, or that he should appoint a lieutenant-general to command the army ; they request that the English parliament should be moved to grant an immediate supply of money for the service of Ireland, the only means to prevent the expence of blood and treasure in a long continued war.

Meanwhile the confederates rose at the time appointed in different places. Sir Phelim O'Nial, on the evening of the 22nd of October, surprised the castle of Charlemont, then a place of consequence; he ransacked the castle, and made the garrison prisoners, from hence he flew to Dungannon and seized the fort, while some of his adherents possessed themselves of the town and castle of Montjoy. Tanderagee was surprised by the sept of O'Hanlon, and Newry betrayed to sir Conn Maginnis: here the insurgents possessed themselves of a great quantity of arms and ammunition. Almost all Fermanagh yielded to Roger, brother to lord Macguire. Every place of strength in Monaghan was seized by the sept of MacMahon; but Derry, Colerane, Lesburn, and Carrickfergus were maintained against the assaults of the rebels; Enneskillen was secured by sir William Cole.

In the County of Cavan both the members, O'Riely and his brother the sheriff, were deeply engaged in the rebellion. Forts, towns, and castles were surrendered to them. Bedel, bishop of Kilmore, was compelled to draw up their remonstrance of grievances, to be presented to the chief governors and council; in this they declare their apprehension of persecution on account of religion; express their regret, at being forced to seize the king's forts for his majesty's service, and profess their readiness to make restitution for any outrages committed by their followers. In the county of Longford, the sept of O'Ferghal seized every castle, house, and plantation of the British inhabitants. Leitrim followed this example.

The English inhabitants, instead of flying to places of strength, or acting in bodies, fell single and unsupported in attempting a feeble defence of their property and dwellings. The alarm of war, and hopes of plunder quickly allured the Irish septs to the standard of O'Nial,

so that in one week he became the leader of many thousands.

In the castle of Charlemont he found a patent of lord Caulfield's, and affixed the seal of it to a forged commission; this appearance of acting under the royal authority served to encourage his adherents, while it confounded the opposite party.

A manifesto was now published by the rebels, in which they professed the greatest loyalty to the king, to protect whom, themselves and the protestants of the realm, by whom they meant the members of the established church, from the dangers threatened equally to all, by the puritans, they had taken arms; the insurgents of Longford transmitted to the state an oath of allegiance which they had taken, together with their list of grievances, and propositions for redress; they proposed, that a general act of oblivion should pass; that the penal laws of Elizabeth should be repealed, and an ample charter of denization granted to the mere Irish; the Ulster rebels did not enter into particulars, and left themselves at liberty to prolong the war by a perpetual alarm of new dangers, fears and jealousies.

EXERCISES.

What was the determination of the Irish parliament on separating? Who was the first insurgent? What was his descent? Who did he engage to join him? Under what pretence did they raise troops? What day were they to begin the attack? What was their plan? Who discovered the plot? Who were taken? Who escaped? Who arrived in Dublin? What assurance did he give the council? To what was Willoughby appointed? How many men had he to defend the castle? What were the rumours? What proclamation was issued? What became of the troops which had been embarked for the Spanish service? What lords appeared before the council? What professions did they make? What did they require? How did the council act? What remonstrance did the lords make when they next

appeared before the council? Who was sent to the king? What did they request of the English parliament? How did sir Phelim O'Nial proceed? Who surprised Tanderagee? Who took Newry? Who conquered Fermanagh? What places held out? How did the members and sheriff of Cavan act? To what did they compel the bishop? What was their remonstrance and offer? What did the English inhabitants attempt to do? What made the Irish so anxious to join O'Nial? By what stratagem did he appear to act under the king's authority? What manifesto did the rebels publish? What professions were made by the insurgents of Longford? What were their demands?

CHAPTER VII.

*Charles applies to the Scotch parliament—Rebels repulsed—
Conduct of the English parliament.*

THE English in Ulster, having recovered from the first surprise, prepared to defend themselves. Carrickfergus was the great northern asylum for those who escaped the rebels, or were driven from their habitations. In other towns which were not surprised, measures were taken for defence, and the friends of government ventured to march out against the enemy. A messenger dispatched by Chichester to the king, returned with assurances of speedy relief. Charles had communicated the state of Ireland to the Scottish parliament; but his expectations from their zeal for religion, and abhorrence of popery were not realized. They affected to apprehend that the English parliament might be offended, should they prepare for the relief of Ireland without their concurrence, and determined in the first place, to treat with the parliament in London.

Charles, however, contrived to collect 1500 men, and dispatched them to Ulster, with arms, ammuni-

tion, and some money. This supply, though small, animated the northern gentry. Having received commissions from the king, they were now legally authorised to command those whom before they could only exhort to defence. Wherever the English inhabitants were embodied, their success shewed the error of their former conduct. In Fermanagh, they forced the rebels to raise the siege of Enniskillen; and lord Macguire's own castle was taken by storm. In Tyrone, sir Phelim O'Nial was obliged to abandon the siege of Castle-Derrick; in Donnegal he was again defeated; his forces were foiled in many other attempts, and their leaders returned to his camp at Newry. Undismayed by those defeats, he resolved to invest Carrickfergus. It being necessary first to reduce Lisburn, he detached for this purpose 4000 men. The town had already sustained a violent assault, yet O'Nial was now confident of success; but sir Arthur Tyringham had reinforced the garrison, and at the very moment of danger, was assisted by sir George Rawdon, a gallant officer. The fierce and repeated efforts of the rebels, were sustained and repelled with firmness and spirit; and this body of rebels, the first that bore the appearance of a regular army, was in the end routed with great loss.

A series of massacres and cruelties now commenced, which throw over this melancholy and eventful contest, a gloom, from which war is in general freed by those customs, usually observed among civilized nations. Scenes occurred, from detailing which, the mind naturally shrinks, in which thousands became victims to fear, revenge, and prejudice, when neither age, rank, nor sex, the valour of the soldier, nor the unoffending conduct of the peasant, could rescue the unhappy sufferers from the fury of the most malignant passions.

To blot those scenes from the page of history, would be more desirable than again to stain it by their repetition.

To oppose the northern Ormond, who was appointed lieutenant-general of the army, proposed to march instantly with such troops as could be spared from the defence of Dublin, but the lords justices contented themselves with sending sir Henry Tichburne, with his regiment, to secure Drogheda from any attempts of the rebels, 4000 of whom lay at Athirdee, seven miles distant from this town. Irish insurrections had often been suppressed by such numbers as could now be employed, when danger was met with promptitude and spirit. But against any spirited measure, the lords justices urged the most frivolous pretexts, and such as justly cast strong doubts on their sincerity.

Their chief dependance was on the English parliament, to whom Charles had recommended the affairs of Ireland. This was a charge readily undertaken, and which they determined to accept in the most extensive sense; fifteen years of contest had now existed between Charles and his subjects; during which their monarch was every day losing ground. The Irish rebellion proved to the popular leaders, a most useful engine for carrying on their attacks; and by a skilful combination, the puritans had now rendered popery, prelacy, and monarchy, equally odious in the minds of a fanatical mob. It was their interest to raise money, levy troops and nominate officers, but to employ them at once to put down the Irish rebellion, was quite foreign from their intentions; every proposition made by the king for its suppression, was an insidious scheme of exhausting England of its arms and treasure; every measure of their own was absolutely necessary for the recovery of Ireland.

While the lords justices waited for supplies from England, the insurrection was spreading in every direction. In Leitrim, the Irish followed the example of the northerners. The sept of the O'Byrnes in the county Wicklow, uniting with their neighbours in Wexford and Carlow, drove the protestants from their forts and dwellings, and extended their ravages to the walls of Dublin. Munster, though the lord president, sir William St. Leger, could not obtain either arms or soldiers sufficient even for a time of peace, was as yet preserved from any material disorder, by the strength of the English protestants, and the loyalty of the Irish gentry. In Connaught, though equally neglected, and particularly irritated by the plan of the western plantation, the torrent of rebellion was stemmed by the good affections of the principal inhabitants; Jones, lord Ranelagh, the president, was effectually assisted by lord Dillon of Costello, and lord Mayo. But the most useful friend to government in the west, was the earl of Clanricarde, who with the Irish, enjoyed the consequence of a chieftain, and with the English, all the dignity of a great English nobleman. To allay the fears of the inhabitants, that the present commotions might be used as a pretence for withholding the long promised confirmation of their estates, he procured a declaration from the king, that his former promises should be fulfilled to every loyal subject. He raised troops, strengthened the fort of Galway, encouraged the loyal, and terrified the disaffected, but being a roman catholic, he was hated and suspected by the state. Every assistance was denied him, and every occasion taken to mortify and disgust him.

The assurances of support which they received from England, not only induced the lords justices and their puritannic adherents, to reject the aid of all who were

not of their own party, but to recall the arms which had been distributed in the pale. Notwithstanding their having received instructions from the English parliament, to publish a proclamation, offering a general pardon to all who should submit within a certain time; no such proclamation was issued, under the pretence that those published before, had not produced any good effect; but these did not contain that general offer of pardon ordered by the English parliament.

The catholics who were impatient for those laws which were to confirm them in their lands, were highly offended at the delay in the meeting of parliament. It was suggested, and the judges seemed to favour this opinion, that unless the houses should hold a meeting on the day to which they had been adjourned, parliament would be really dissolved. The earl of Ormond, lord Dillon, of Costello, and others of approved loyalty, though no favourers of the justices, contended for an immediate session, and a continuance of the parliament. The justices declared for the prorogation: but after considerable discussion, acceded to a meeting for one day, on the condition of parliament publishing a protestation against the rebels, and that they should have liberty to depute some of their own members, to treat about an accommodation with them.

On the meeting of parliament, the houses proceeded directly to frame their protestations against the rebels. This appellation was highly offensive to the insurgent leaders; those members who either feared or favoured them, declared against describing them by any more offensive appellation, than that of discontented gentlemen. But the opposite party prevailed; they next nominated some members of each house to treat with the rebels. These proceedings could not be completed in one day, a second was therefore allowed; they petition-

ed for a longer session, but the lords justices were inexorable. Though men of every party clamoured against this conduct of the governors, parliament empowered them to collect forces, and levy money for their support. At the same time, a considerable party sent lord Dillon with a memorial to the king, praying him to remove the lords justices, and to substitute Ormond in their room. To counteract this memorial, the lords justices sent an agent to the earl of Liecester, and represented lord Dillon's mission in such a manner that on his arrival near London, he was seized by order of the English commons, and confined until it was too late to present the memorial.

EXERCISES.

To what town did the English of Ulster retreat? What assurances were received from the king? On what grounds did the Scottish parliament refuse their assistance? How many men were sent to Ireland? With what success did they oppose the rebels? Where was sir Phelim O'Nial defeated? What town did he invest? With what success? What did Ormond propose? Was his proposal acceded to? Why did the English parliament readily undertake the charge of Irish affairs? Did they make any effort to suppress the disturbances? What were now the proceedings of the rebels? What preserved Munster from equal disorder? Was Connaught peaceful? How did the earl of Clanricarde act? What promise did he obtain from the king? Was he aided by the state? Why did the lords justices recal the arms? What reason did they give for not issuing the proclamation? Why were the catholics displeased at the adjournment of parliament? What did they allege? Did parliament meet? What did they do? By what name was it proposed that the rebels should be recognized? How long did parliament sit? What memorial was sent by lord Dillon? How did the justices act? What became of Dillon?

CHAPTER VIII.

Deputation wait on the rebels—Expedition of Coote—Progress of the rebellion.

IN the mean time the deputation of the parliament addressed themselves to Roger Moore and his associates, who lay near Dundalk with 2500 ill-armed men: he received them with coldness and disdain. Affecting great indignation at the terms in which the order of the houses for the treaty with the rebels was expressed, he tore it in pieces, and rejected every overture to an accommodation. He now gave his followers the name of the Catholic army, and published an oath of association to be taken by the insurgents, calculated to give the nation a favourable impression of their cause and motives.

At length the depredations which were committed all round the capital, forced the chief governors to some exertion. Sir Charles Coote was sent to relieve the castle of Wicklow, which was invested by the rebels: he succeeded, and drove the Irish to the mountains; this expedition was closed with the most wanton cruelties. Notwithstanding their disgraces in the north, the rebels prepared to form the siege of Drogheda with a considerable army: 600 foot and 50 horse, both undisciplined and inexperienced, were detached from Dublin to reinforce the garrison of Drogheda. About three miles from the town they were surprized by 2500 of the rebels, and defeated, though without any great loss, except of arms and ammunition. This was called the battle of Julianstown-bridge, and had a great effect in adding to the reputation and numbers of the rebels. Whole companies and regiments of the royal army deserted to them. The English inhabitants of Dublin were in the greatest alarm, and the jus-

tices recalled sir Charles Coote from Wicklow to Dublin. He forced his way through 1000 of the sept of O'Toole, was made governor of Dublin, and applied himself to secure it against the enemy.

. Hitherto the rebellion had been confined to the province of Ulster, a few counties in Leinster, and Leitrim in Connaught, and carried on entirely by the Irish; but in the beginning of December it was rendered more formidable by the defection of the inhabitants of the English pale—they were determined to this step by the arguments of Moore, who addressed himself particularly to lord Gormanston, a nobleman of great power and influence—a meeting was concerted; the lords Fingal, Gormanston, Slane, Lowth, Dunsany, Trimbleston, Netterville, and some hundred of the principal gentlemen assembled on the hill of Crofty; they were met by Moore and other rebel leaders, attended by some of their forces. Lord Gormanston asked for what purpose they entered the pale in arms; Moore answered, that they had taken arms to maintain the king's prerogative, and to make the subjects of Ireland as free as those of England. He was again required to declare whether these were his real motives, without any private or sinister views. On answering in the affirmative, Gormanston and his party declared, that they would unite with them for these purposes, and consider all those as enemies who should refuse to assist their cause.

The lords justices and council now summoned the nobles of the pale to attend in Dublin, to confer on the state of the kingdom, and, as they added in their letters, "for no other end." The nobles answered, that hitherto their advice for the safety of the kingdom had been so unfavourably received that they had reason to think their loyalty was suspected, and that they were now deterred from waiting on the council, as they had received infor-

mation that sir Charles Coote had uttered speeches at that board, tending to a design of a general massacre of the catholics. This answer was followed by a proclamation denying that Coote or any other person had made any such speeches, disclaiming so horrid a design as that of massacre, and repeating the summons with assurances of safety and protection.

These lords, however, had now proceeded too far to retract ; and some severities of Coote's in the neighbourhood of Dublin, gave them an opportunity of complaining of the cruelties practised on them ; these complaints were followed by another proclamation, justifying the conduct of the state. The Roman Catholic lords, having determined to take arms, prepared an apology for their revolt to be transmitted to the king—in this they enumerated the injuries they had received from his governors ; they entreated him to grant a free parliament, in which their grievances might be redressed, and in the mean time to command a cessation of arms ; they expressed the utmost respect for the state, retracted their former charge against Coote, of his having expressed an intention of massacre, but insisted that they had reason to apprehend the worst consequences from his cruelty—they declared their readiness to attend such commissioners as the lords justices should appoint at any place, removed from the power of Coote, to confer on the means of restoring the peace of the kingdom.

They now proceeded to raise troops ; lord Gormanston was declared general in chief ; the earl of Fingal general of horse ; measures were taken for procuring supplies, and every avenue to the capital blockaded—The justices in their dispatches to Leicester, treated the defection of the pale with contempt, as an event which added nothing to the strength of the rebels ; but as the rebels had originally pleaded the king's commission, and as they now

professed such zeal for his service, they proposed that a proclamation should be issued immediately against them, but in such terms as might not at once wipe away their offence by laying down their arms; and that twenty copies of this proclamation, signed by the king and scaled with his privy signet, should be sent over. This proclamation pronounced the insurgents to be rebels, and traitors against the king, and enemies to the crown of England and Ireland, and forty copies were returned to the lords justices without delay.

A. D. 1642. The rebellion now became general; manifestos were published by the rebels, professing the greatest loyalty, and dwelling on the dangerous conjunction of the Irish governors with the popular party in England. The contagion spread through Connaught, and it required all the power and credit of Clancricarde to preserve the county Galway untainted. In Munster the first symptoms of commotion were met by the lord president, with exemplary severity—lord Mountgarret seized Kilkeenny; Waterford was yielded to his son. Nearly all the relations of the earl of Ormond were implicated, and reports were spread that the earl would soon declare for the rebels. Almost every fort in the counties of Kilkenny, Waterford, and Tipperary, were reduced, while the O'Brians overran Clare in defiance of their chieftain, the earl of Thomond. But the dissension of the insurgents gave leisure to Saint Leger to collect such forces as saved the province.

During these transactions in the south, the Ulster and Leinster rebels, with a numerous but ill appointed body, pressed the siege of Drogheda. The town was gallantly defended by sir Henry Tichburne, under all the disadvantages of a weak post, a small garrison, great deficiency of supplies, and little exertions made by the state to assist him. A party of the besiegers was admitted by

the treachery of some of the inhabitants, but they were repelled—the lords justices were in the mean time, engaged in a different pursuit, the legal conviction of the lords and gentlemen concerned in the rebellion. On the arrival of sir Simon Harcourt with 4000 men, Coote was sent against a party of rebels stationed in the village of Swords; in a skirmish with them, sir Lorenzo Cary, youngest son of lord Falkland, fell.—The rebels were routed and the adjacent country wasted by fire and sword.—Ormond was detached with 2000 foot and 300 horse against the town of Naas, where the rebels of the adjacent counties had collected their chief force, and held their councils. Though he executed his orders with more humanity, lord Gormanston remonstrated by letter against the cruelty of his conduct, and threatened the earl, that his wife and children should answer for a continuance of it. Ormond returned a spirited reply, shewing the baseness of the threat, which, however, he said, should not deter him from doing his duty to the king.

After a long interval, a second reinforcement of 1500 foot, and 400 horse, arrived from England, commanded by sir Richard Grenville, and Colonel George Monk. They brought neither money nor provisions, and the country in the neighbourhood of the capital had been so wasted, that it was impossible to provide for this increase of numbers; many of the English soldiers deserted, and to prevent a mutiny, it was determined to employ them. Ormond was detached against some rebels, stationed seven miles from Dublin. The military men were now of opinion, that the royal army was sufficiently strong to raise the siege of Drogheda. The justices were averse from any vigorous measures, but as they could not deny the necessity of giving the soldiers an opportunity of seeking provisions in the quarters

of the enemy, they resolved, instead of making a formal attempt to relieve Drogheda, to try the effect of a diversion. Ormond was commissioned to lead 3000 foot, and 500 horse towards the Boyne, to pursue the rebels with fire and sword; eight days were allowed for the expedition, and he was strictly enjoined not to pass the river.


The first intelligence of Ormond's march determined sir Phelim O'Nial to raise the siege; he retired precipitately, northward. Ormond reported this circumstance to the justices, and requested permission to pursue the rebels; but they repeated their injunction, that he should not pass the Boyne. On his arrival at Drogheda, he, with the concurrence of the officers of the garrison, made another application for permission to confirm the overthrow of the insurgents, but without effect. The rebels soon recovered from their consternation, and regained the places they had abandoned; so that sir Henry Tichburne had great difficulty in saving Drogheda from being again invested, after the retreat of Ormond. He defeated a strong party of the enemy near Athindee, and, strengthened by a detachment of 500 men from Ormond's army, marched to Dundalk, and drove the rebels from that town.

The sudden flight of the northerners on the first appearance of danger, made a strong impression on the insurgents of the pale. Several gentlemen resolved to submit; they addressed themselves to Ormond on his march to Drogheda. The earl in his dispatches, desired to be instructed how he was to treat those who surrendered; some had not engaged in actual hostilities, some were only accused of harbouring or paying contributions. Pacific measures, however, would not have promoted the great object, extensive forfeitures. The English commons had early petitioned the king not to

alienate any of the escheated lands, and had lately proceeded in a scheme for raising money on the lands thus expected to escheat. A bill was framed for repaying those who should advance certain sums for suppressing the rebels, by vesting them with proportional estates in Ireland. The king foresaw how much this would exasperate the discontented, but he was obliged to consent. The lords justices favoured the views of their English friends, and directed Ormond to make no distinction; to receive those who should surrender, only as prisoners of war; all were sent to Dublin and closely confined.

The war between Charles and his parliament was now on the point of breaking out. It was the interest of his adversaries to alienate the affections of his subjects; and as he had frequently expressed his determination of marching in person against the Irish rebels, an effort was now made to revive the rumour, that he had granted a commission to them, and thus to efface the impressions made by his zealous declarations. The governors, ever ready to second the views of their partizans in England, put some gentlemen to the torture, to extort confessions which would have been injurious to the king, but in vain; and they would not submit the examinations of the prisoners fairly to the public, or even to the king's secretary. Charles now declared his resolution of going with all convenient speed to chastise the Irish rebels, of raising a guard for his person, and if necessary, selling and pledging his parks and houses. To deter him from this undertaking, the governors made the most discouraging reports of the state of the army and the country; but these representations had not as much weight with the king as the opposition shewn to this measure by English parliament.

The last hopes which the gentlemen of the pale entertained of an accommodation, on the king's coming to Ireland, were now at an end, and their sole reliance was on their arms. Abandoned by their Ulster confederates, they united with lord Mountgarret and his associates—Ormond was detached with 3000 foot and 500 horse into the county of Kildare, to destroy the possessions of the rebels, to relieve the castles invested by their parties, and to strengthen the royal garrisons. On his return to Athy, he learned that Mountgarret, Moore, and other leaders, with 8000 foot and some horse, were advantageously posted at the distance of four miles. A council of war was called by Ormond, in which it was resolved not to attack the enemy with such inferior forces, except their march to Dublin was opposed. They, therefore, proceeded on their march, but were so closely pressed by the rebels that an action became unavoidable. The onset of the Irish was desperate but ill maintained: their left wing was broken by the first charge, the right supported the contest for some time, but was at length broken. When the English commons received the account of this action, called the battle of Kiltrush, they ordered the earl of Ormond a jewel of the value of 500*l.* and that the lords should be moved to unite with them in requesting his majesty to create him a knight of the garter.



EXERCISES.

How did Moore receive the deputation of parliament? Where was sir Charles Coote sent? What place did the rebels besiege? What troops were sent to reinforce Drogheda? Were they defeated? Who was recalled from Wicklow? To what parts of Ireland was the rebellion confined? Who induced the inhabitants of the pale to join the rebels? What was lord Gormanston's declaration? What summons was sent by the lords justices to the lords of the pale? What

was their answer? What apology and demand was sent to the king by the lords of the pale? What did they retract? Who was appointed general in chief of the insurgents? What report did the justices make? What proclamation was issued? Did the rebellion become general? What reports were spread of Ormond? How was Munster preserved? Who defended Drogheda? What are the particulars of that siege? How were the justices employed? Where was sir Lorenzo Cary killed? Where was Ormond sent? How was he threatened? Who brought a second reinforcement? What were the orders given to Ormond? Why did Ormond retreat? How did the justices receive the offers of submission? What was their motive? What rumour was now raised to annoy the king? What did the king declare to be his intentions? Who joined lord Mountgarret? Where was Ormond detached? Where did he meet the rebels? What was the issue? How was Ormond rewarded?

RECAPITULATION.

In what year did James the 1st ascend the throne? With respect to the English crown in what state did he find Ireland? What opinion prevailed, with respect to his religious sentiments? What was the last act of Mountjoy's government? What was the nature of the civil regulations made for improving the country? What produced a remonstrance from the English families of the pale in 1605? What afforded an opportunity of making the plantation in Ulster? Under what regulations was this plantation made? To what extent did the city of London engage in it? How was the military force for its support raised? What was done respecting the church, university and corporate towns? How many years had elapsed since the meeting of parliament, until the first held in the reign of James? What objection was made to the holding of this parliament, and why? How many members were returned, and of what parties were they composed? What occurred on the election of a speaker? Why was the parliament prorogued? How did the recusants act on the prerogation? In what year did parliament re-assemble, and how was business conducted? On what occasion was the king requested to send commissioners into Ireland? In what year did lord Falkland come to Ireland? What discovery was made respecting estates in Connaught during his administration? Who succeeded James and in what year? What had Charles recourse to for the support of his army? What voluntary contribution was given, and on what condition? What circumstance throws a doubt on the king's intention of calling a parliament according to his promise? In what year was Falkland recalled? What difficulties were at that time experienced with respect to the administration of Ireland? In what year did Wentworth arrive in Ireland? By what means did he procure a renewal

of the voluntary grant? By what management did he evade the confirmation of the graces by parliament? What body sat at the same time with the parliament? What were Wentworth's proceedings with respect to Connaught, and what was his object? How did the dissagreements of Charles with the Scots encrease the difficulty of governing Ireland, and what measures did Wentworth adopt? Why was Wentworth recalled from the government of Ireland? On what occasion did he offer to return? In what disposition did he find the parliament which assembled in 1640? - When was the earl of Ormond first employed? What troops assembled at Carrickfergus? What occurred to diminish the attachment to the king, shewn by the parliament, on its first meeting, and what were its proceedings on the second meeting? What prevented the earl of Strafford from resuming the government of Ireland? What embarrassment was experienced from the army which had been assembled in Ireland? What effect had the prosecution of Strafford on the Irish parliament, and how did they shew their enmity to him? How did the Irish committee in London, shew their power on the death of Wandesford? How did Charles intend to dispose of the Irish forces on their being disbanded? What prevented him from putting this design into execution? What occurred in the year 1641? Who was the chief fomentor of the rebellion? What was the plan of the conspirators? When was the plot communicated to government? What success had the rebels in Ulster? When did the protestants begin to recover the places they had lost? What did the rebels state to be their object in taking arms? What imposition did sir Phelim O'Nial practice to gain adherents to his cause? What occurred between government and the roman catholics of the pale? How did the Scotch parliament act on being applied to by Charles for aid against the rebels? What use did the English parliament make of this rebellion? What line of conduct did the lords justices pursue? What took place respecting the assembling of parliament? What difference of opinion existed respecting the designation of the rebels? How did Roger Moore receive the deputation from parliament? When did the roman catholics of the pale join the rebels? What passed between them and the lords justices immediately after their defection? When did the rebellion become general? With what success was the siege of Drogheda prosecuted? Under what restrictions was Ormond allowed to raise the siege of Drogheda? What was the issue of the expedition? What effect had the retreat of sir Phelim O'Nial from before Drogheda, on the gentlemen of the pale? What are the particulars of the battle of Kilrush?

BOOK THE EIGHTH.

CHAPTER I.

Arrival of Scottish troops—Reinforcements arrive to the rebels from Dunkirk—Assembly at Kilkenny—Commissioners sent to Ireland.

A. D. 1642. THE battle of Kilrush had given the power of the rebels a severe shock; still they were able to maintain themselves against the intermittent and insulated attempts made to put a period to the contest. Troops arrived from England in small bodies without money or provisions, acted with little energy or concert, and became mutinous and insolent. In this state of affairs, an Irish parliament sat for three days in Dublin; by expelling the members actually in rebellion, and by excluding those who refused to take the oath of supremacy, they were reduced to an inconsiderable number; they declared for a rigorous execution of penal statutes, and urged both to the king, and English parliament, the necessity of new and severe laws against recusants; the English parliament echoed these sentiments; such bills were prepared for transmission as if their sole object was to exasperate the insurgents to the utmost, or as if they had already been completely reduced.

The state of parties in England had protracted the treaty for sending Scottish forces into Ireland. At length, however, it was resolved to accept the assistance of Scotland; 2500 men were destined for the immediate service of Ulster. On their arrival, the town and castle of Carrickfergus were to be surrendered to

them, and when the residue of the stipulated numbers, 10,000, should land, they were to be invested with the town and castle of Colerain, and the northern war was to be committed entirely to the Scottish generals. These were conditions to which the king submitted with great reluctance.

In the month of April, the first detachment landed at Carrickfergus under Robert Monroe; their commander was instantly joined by some provincial forces, amounting to 1800 foot and seven troops of cavalry. They advanced; the rebels abandoned the town, and the castle was soon reduced. Carlingford was given up to Tichburne, and the rebel leaders found their tumultuary levies shrinking on the first appearance of danger. Sir Phelim O'Nial, finding it necessary to abandon Armagh, set fire to the town, and retired to Charlemont, but without ammunition to maintain that post. His followers dispersed, and several leaders retired to different retreats—Monroe was pressed to pursue his success, but was prevented by his instructions. The inactivity of their enemies encouraged the rebels to take the field, and sir Phelim appeared again at the head of an army. As the Scots were employed in ravaging the country and sending large herds of cattle into Scotland, the task of opposing them devolved on the English. They were routed with considerable loss, by sir Robert and sir William Stuart.

So dispirited were the rebels now become, that they had determined to abandon their enterprize, when intelligence was received of the arrival from Dunkirk of Owen O'Nial with one hundred officers and a considerable supply of arms and ammunition. This officer had served in the imperial and Spanish armies with great reputation, and was long expected by the rebels, as he had from the first, promised to assist their undertaking.

To the great mortification of his kinsman, sir Phelim, he was unanimously declared by the northern Irish head and leader of their confederacy.

The new general began by expressing his detestation of the barbarities practised by sir Phelim and his followers; he dismissed all the prisoners in safety; and then began to prepare for the defence of Charlemont, to collect troops and discipline his men. In his operations, he received no interruption from the Scots or the English. At length, in the month of August, the earl of Leven arrived, and increased the Scottish army to 10,000 men. The whole force of the province was now 20,000 foot and 1000 horse, a force infinitely superior to any the rebels could muster. Léven, at the head of this army, crossed the Bann and advanced into the county of Tironé; hence he addressed a letter to Owen O'Nial, expressing his concern, that a man of his reputation should have embarked in such a cause. Owen replied, that he had better reasons for coming to the relief of his country, than his lordship could plead for marching into England against his king. Leven then retired, delivered up the command to Monro, assured him he might expect a total overthrow if Owen O'Nial should once collect an army, and then returned to Scotland.

Monro remained inactive, and O'Nial continued to form his forces; while the army which should oppose him was neglected by England and left without supplies of cloathing or provisions. While the rebels were thus allowed to strengthen themselves in every province, two vessels arrived from Dunkirk to them with arms and ammunition. Colonel Thomas Preston, brother of lord Gormanston, an officer of reputation, followed in a ship of war attended by two frigates and six other vessels laden with ordnance, military stores, 500 officers and several engineers. Twelve other vessels soon arrived with

arms, artillery and ammunition, and a number of Irish officers and soldiers discharged from the French service by Cardinal Richelieu, amply provided and assured of further succours. To increase the distress of the English, the enemy were masters of the sea, and cut off their supplies from England; some activity in military operations was now dreaded from the rebels, but they were occupied in executing a plan for giving a form of authority to their proceedings, so as to unite their associates in the different provinces, and to enforce submission and obedience. For this purpose, the authority of the clergy had been already employed. The Roman catholic prelate of Armagh had first summoned his clergy to a synod, then a general synod was convened of all the Romish ecclesiastics of Ireland, at Kilkenny, where they sat in the month of May. Each of those synods opened with a declaration, that the war maintained by the catholics against sectaries and puritans, for the defence of the Roman catholic religion, the prerogative of the king, and the rights and liberties of Ireland, was lawful and necessary. It directed that all their confederates should be united by an oath of association; and denounced sentence of excommunication against all who should refuse to take it; against all who assisted the enemy; all who should invade the possessions of any Roman catholic; and against all who should stand neuter. The nobility and gentry, then resident in Kilkenny, united in framing an oath of association, and in appointing a general assembly of the nation to meet in that city in the ensuing month of October.

The time for holding this assembly was now arrived catholic lords, prelates and clergy, with Roman catholic deputies from counties and towns of every province, met at Kilkenny, and formed an assembly on the plan of a parliament, but both lords and commons sat in the same chamber. They began with declaring their determina-

tion to maintain the rights of their church. They declared their acceptance, as the rule of government, of the common-law of England and the statutes of Ireland, so far as they were consistent with the church and the liberties of their country. They commanded all persons to bear allegiance to the king and maintain his just prerogatives. They renounced the authority of the Irish government administered in Dublin, by a "malignant party, to his highnesses's great disservice, and in compliance with their confederates, the malignant party in England." The administration of public justice they assumed to themselves. They assigned a council of twelve to each county; from these lay an appeal to provincial councils, consisting of two deputies from each county. From these there lay an appeal to what was called the supreme council of the confederate catholics of Ireland, consisting of twenty-four persons chosen by the general assembly.—The provincial generals were next chosen; Owen O'Nial, for Ulster; Preston, for Leinster; Garret Barry, for Munster; colonel John Burke, for Connaught, with the title of lieutenant general, as they hoped that the earl of Clanricarde would unite with them, and accept the chief command of this province. They next proceeded to regulate the coin and raise its value; and to dispatch ambassadors to foreign courts to solicit succours; and they prepared petitions to the king and queen with representations of their grievances.

The appointment of officers to the different provinces was the cause of great dissensions and mortifications; the more moderate wished to obliterate the memory of those barbarities which had marked the commencement of the insurrection, and to have it considered that the civil war was commencing with the convention. On this account sir Phelim O'Nial and Roger Moore were passed

over ; Clanricarde steadily rejected all overtures made to shake his loyalty, but they gained a new associate of great consequence, Touchet, earl of Castlehaven ; and baron Audley of England, on the first intelligence of the rebellion, offered his services to government ; as he was a Roman catholic they could not be accepted : he desired a passport to go to England, this was also refused ; he returned to one of his seats in the county of Kildare ; after residing there some time, he was employed by the confederates as a mediator between them and the justices, and was severely reprimanded for holding correspondence with the rebels. He had lately been indicted on a charge of high treason ; relying on his innocence, he hastened to Dublin ; without being heard, he was committed to close custody : having effected his escape, he fled to Kilkenny and joined the confederates.

The progress of the civil war in England had produced corresponding parties in Ireland ; the justices were zealous adherents of the parliament ; Ormond was at the head of those who remained stedfast in their loyalty to the king. To gain the army was the great object of each party, and while all were intriguing to accomplish this object, the rebels were left to pursue their own measures without molestation. The army was in want of every necessary, and the prospect of receiving their arrears of pay from the parliament, operated as a strong counterpoise to the influence which Ormond had over them, and which he used in keeping them steady to the cause of royalty. Charles had little means of gaining an influence over the soldiers, except by his favours to their general, whose commission he enlarged, while the justices took every opportunity of mortifying Ormond, lately created a marquis, and thwarting his measures. The English commons sent two commissioners to Ireland,

Reynolds and Goodwin, to gain the direction of the affairs of the whole kingdom, and every means were taken to prevent the king from learning the true state of affairs in Ireland; but this policy was defeated by the spirit and firmness of the royalists.

EXERCISES.

Did their defeat at Kilrush entirely destroy the power of the rebels? What was the conduct of parliament? Where did the Scottish troops land? On what conditions did they undertake the war? Who commanded them? What town did sir Phelim O'Nial burn? By whom was he defeated? What encouraged the rebels to continue the war? Who was chosen their leader? What measures did Owen O'Nial adopt? What message did the earl of Leven send? What was O'Nial's reply? What reinforcements arrived to the rebels? What steps did the Romish clergy take? What was the declaration of the synod? When was the assembly held? What did they declare? Whose authority did they renounce? What were their regulations? Who were the provincial generals? Did their appointment cause dissention? Who was passed over? What was the conduct of Clanricarde? What induced the earl of Castlehaven to revolt? Why were the rebels left unmolested? Why did the justices annoy Ormond? What commissioners were sent to Ireland? For what purpose?

CHAPTER II.

The king issues a commission to treat with the rebels—Sir William Parsons removed—Commissioners meet at Castle Martin—Treaty concluded.

THE affairs of Charles in England were now in such a state, that he was obliged to risk the unpopularity of accepting the services of papists; the parliament inveighed against this impiety, and declared their intention of inviting the Scots to assist them against the

enemies of the protestant religion. Charles saw the necessity of strengthening himself against such an union ; for this purpose he turned his attention towards Ireland. Could the rebellion be suppressed, the parliament would be deprived of a popular pretence for raising men and money, and an army of royalists might soon join the royal standard from Ireland. The insurgents had frequently solicited for liberty to lay their grievances before the king, and for a cessation of hostilities, until their complaints could be heard and discussed ; Charles therefore issued a commission under the great seal of England, to the marquis of Ormond, the earl of Clanricarde, the earl of Roscommon, viscount Moore, sir Thomas Lucas, sir Maurice Eustace, and Thomas Burke esquire, to meet the principal recusants, and to transmit their propositions.

This overture was provoking to the justices, and alarming to Reynolds and Goodwin, who were called the committee of parliament ; they solicited the army and the citizens of Dublin to sign a remonstrance against the commission, but with little success ; Parsons doubted whether he should not prevent its execution ; the king was informed of their proceedings ; he wrote to the lords justices in terms of great severity, and transmitted his warrants to them and Ormond, for securing Goodwin and Reynolds, but these agents had already fled. Charles now proposed to make Ormond lord lieutenant, leaving it to his own choice, either to accept or decline this station ; he declined accepting this offer, and proceeded to the treaty.

In conjunction with the other commissioners, he sent a summons to the lords Gormanston, Mountgarret, Ikerrin, and seven others, who had signed the petition requiring them to send a committee of thirty laymen to meet the king's commissioners at Drogheda,

with due respect to the king's authority. The supreme council returned an answer, in which they expressed their surprise that a commission founded on an application made by them in August, should be concealed until the succeeding February, and declared it necessary for them to have a view or copy of it; they resented the indignity of supposing them ignorant of the respect due to the king, but above all they were offended at the expression in the safe conduct granted by the justices to their committee, in which the recusants were stiled actors or abettors in an odious rebellion, which expressions they supposed were inserted by the justices without authority, and declared their resolution to abandon all thought of accommodation, until the imputation of rebellion should be retracted. The commissioners doubted whether they should proceed any farther in their negotiations, but their zeal for accomplishing a treaty so essential to the king's interest, induced them to send an answer, and enclose a copy of their commission, in which the king expressed his extreme indignation at the odious rebellion which the recusants of Ireland had, without ground or colour, raised against his person, crown and dignity; this proved the justices had but copied his majesty's words. At the same time the earl of Castlehaven laboured to inspire his associates with greater moderation, and at his request they wrote in humbler terms to the commissioners, whose second letter brought them into a still more tractable disposition; at length it was agreed that six agents of the council, all laymen, should attend the king's commissioners at Trim.

It was proposed in council, that a cessation of hostilities should take place during the negotiation, this was opposed by the lords justices; they determined on employing lord Lisle to reduce the towns of Ross and Wexford, an enterprise which Ormond had frequently re-

commended before the arrival of Preston; great preparations and exertions were made to support Lisle in this expedition; but Ormond informed the justices, that as the army was particularly entrusted to him, he deemed it necessary to take the command of this expedition; as the army was ready, and the command could not be denied to the marquis, he was suffered to march, but the supplies necessary for his operations were withheld. He drove the rebels from several posts, and formed the siege of Ross, expecting to receive stores by sea; no stores arrived, and after an unsuccessful assault, Ormond found himself with only three days provisions. A hasty retreat was his only resource; but Preston, with 6000 foot, and 650 horse, occupied a defile, through which he must pass in his retreat to Dublin. Had Preston remained in his position, the ruin of the royalists was inevitable but he rushed into the plain confident of an easy victory; Ormond attacked him with spirit; the Irish army received a total defeat, and might have been entirely destroyed, but the English cavalry under Lisle, after defeating the Irish horse, never returned to the field.

In the mean time the agents of the confederates attended on the king's commissioners at Trim, and presented their remonstrance of grievances, and petitioned for redress. Ormond transmitted this remonstrance to the king. In opposition to it, the lords justices, in a long letter, endeavoured to dissuade his majesty from any accommodation. Ormond considered the propositions of the confederates as inadmissible, at the same time he condemned the representations of the lords justices, and accused them of concealing the true state of Ireland from the king; they however, proceeded in their own course, and every thing was done that could irritate the confederates, and make them hopeless of a successful

issue to the treaty. It was now evident that during the continuance of the present government of Ireland, no accommodation could take place which might enable the king to draw any assistance from that kingdom, but as any violent change might raise a clamour among his enemies in England, Borlase was continued, and sir Henry Tichburne substituted for Parsons, and the Irish privy council was commanded not to pay obedience to any orders, or execute any warrant without the king's special approbation.

As a final treaty of peace required more time than the urgency of affairs could allow, Ormond received an order to treat about a temporary cessation of hostilities. At this time, the kingdom was in the most melancholy state; the English soldiers could with difficulty obtain provisions enough to preserve them from famishing; while the rebels extended their excursions in every direction; cut off many detachments, and made themselves masters of some places of importance. The applications of the new lords justices and council to the English parliament were not attended with any considerable effect. As the last effort to keep the army from disbanding or perishing, they had recourse to an expedient, of which the commons in England had set the example. Without consulting, or receiving any warrant from the king, they established an excise. But although the tax amounted to half the value of the commodity, such was the poverty of the kingdom, that the money thus raised, proved utterly inadequate to the necessities of the state.

Ormond now proceeded to bring about the treaty. For the honour of the king, it was necessary that the first overture should come from the other side; for this purpose, his agents were employed to confer with the assembly at Kilkenny. The Romish clergy saw in the

present confusion the prospect of power and wealth, and were averse from any measure tending to restore the public peace; but the majority of the assembly were more consistent and temperate: they considered that to decline a cessation, would be to refute all their professions of loyalty, and their pretences of a necessity for taking arms, and agreed to a cessation for twelve months, on certain conditions to be proposed by their agents to the marquis of Ormond. As a preliminary, the confederates demanded a new and free parliament: to this it was dangerous to accede, while they were masters of most of the great towns and counties, could control the elections, and thus might make laws, and decide on their own actions. Ormond, therefore, refused this proposition, and demanded as a preliminary, on his part, that if the cessation took place, the confederates should contribute in some reasonable proportion to maintain the king's forces in Ireland. After some debate and delay, the confederates consented to recede from their expectations of a new parliament, and agreed to the propositions of a supply, leaving the particular sum to be ascertained by their agents now commissioned to attend the marquis, at such time and place as he should appoint.

Ormond was aware of the odious light in which this treaty would be looked on by the parliamentarians of England, and how severely his conduct would be scrutinized by their partizans in Dublin. He, therefore, applied to the privy council and moved, that if the members were of opinion that a cessation could be dishonourable to the king, or dangerous to his protestant subjects of Ireland, they should signify it to his majesty, and propose some other mode for preserving the kingdom, and he would proceed no farther. When no other mode could be devised, he moved that if 10,000*l.* might be raised, he would continue the war and endeavour to re-

duce Wexford ; to raise such a supply was declared impossible. The marquis therefore proceeded to meet the Irish agents at Castle Martin in the county of Kildare ; they required that the free exercise of their religion should continue during the cessation, and that a free parliament should be called. Ormond rejected these demands ; they demanded liberty to act against the king's enemies, and that a way might be prescribed of distinguishing between the royal party and that of the malig-nants. On these points he declined giving an explicit answer ; to some propositions he consented with some restrictions ; but above all things, he demanded a supply previous to the cessation. They remarked that this demand was not warranted by the king's commission, and refused to be bound by any previous stipulation ; but declared their intentions of granting a free gift on concluding the truce.

Ormond conceived that their present confidence arose from the prosperous state of their armies, and particularly from the progress of Preston. He therefore determined to suspend his negotiations, and if possible force Preston to an engagement. This Preston avoided, and the dread of famine forced Ormond to return to Dublin more strongly confirmed in his opinion of the necessity of a cessation. For this event the king was impatient. To silence all opposition to this measure, Parsons, and other partizans of the English parliament, were accused of high treason, and committed by his order to close custody ; a commission passed under the great seal of Ireland, empowering Ormond to treat for a cessation for one year, on such terms as he might think proper ; and giving him a full indemnity from all trouble on account of this transaction.

Notwithstanding the successes of the rebels in every quarter, and the zealous interference of an emissary from

A. D. the pope: Ormond, at length, concluded a treaty on the 15th of September, for a cessation: the 1643. confederates agreed to grant the king 30,000*l.* one half in money, to be paid at different periods, the other in cattle. This treaty was received with great discontent and clamour in England and Ireland.

EXERCISES.

What induced Charles to desire assistance from the Irish? Who was appointed to receive the propositions of the recusants? Who did this proceeding provoke? How did Charles act? What offer did he make to Ormond? Whom did Ormond summons? What was their reply? How did the commissioners act? Where did they meet the recusants? What was proposed in council? Why was this proposal rejected? Who attacked Ormond? Why was not Ormond's victory complete? Of what did Ormond accuse the justices? Which of the justices was removed? What orders were given to the privy council? What was the state of the army? What measures were taken to relieve their necessities? What were the preliminaries proposed on each side, as the basis of the treaty? Where did he meet the Irish agents? What were their demands? Who was accused of high treason? What were the terms of the treaty at length agreed upon?

CHAPTER III.

*Effects of the treaty—Terms of a peace referred to Ormond
—Mission of Glamorgan—Arrival of the pope's nuncio.*

NOTWITHSTANDING Charles's expectations, he derived from this treaty little advantage. No more than 4000 royalists were sent into England. The supply promised by the confederates, was slowly and irregularly paid; the terms of cessation were infringed; and he

Scots under Monro and the English who sided with the parliament, were encouraged to disregard it altogether. The solemn league and covenant was introduced and taken by the Scottish troops, while the English soldiers were with difficulty kept in their allegiance to the king. The confederates shewed little disposition to rescue Charles from his parliament, hoping to extort from his distresses more important concessions. Ormond, in vain, endeavoured to shew them, that if the parliament succeeded, they must yield to that power which could overcome the king.

The increasing perplexities of Charles made him so anxious to effect a peace, that he became every day less disinclined to make greater concessions to the Roman catholics, from whose promises he had great expectations of assistance, if this object was once accomplished. Charles was attended at Oxford by agents from both the Roman catholics and the protestants of Ireland.— But he and his ministers found themselves utterly incapable of attempting any accommodation between the extravagant demands of one party, and the violent remonstrances of the other against any concessions to their antagonists. The king, anxious to escape the trouble and responsibility of this negotiation, threw the weight off himself by sending a commission to Ormond, now lord lieutenant of Ireland, to make a definitive treaty with the Roman catholics, on such terms as he should think best calculated to promote the public welfare.

A. D. Ormond was well aware of the difficulties and
embarrassments which attended this undertaking;
1644. he resolved, however, to obey the king, and he
was attended by the commissioners of the confederates,
on the 6th of September.—There was no difficulty in
agreeing to a continuance of the cessation, but the con-
ferences about peace proved more perplexing. At

length the king empowered Ormond to make peace on any terms ; but this nobleman, anxious to relieve himself from the responsibility thus thrown on him, tendered his resignation on the ground that the confederates expected from a countryman in his station, more than could with propriety be granted.

A. D. Ormond, however, was a man too valuable to be lost in the present state of the king's affairs ; and 1645. to reconcile him to a post from which he could not be removed, Charles loaded him with such favours as he could in his present circumstances bestow. In the mean time the Irish employed every means to strengthen their confederacy. The anxiety of Charles to conclude a peace induced him, instead of relying entirely on Ormond to bring the negociation to a successful issue, to repose a vain dependance on secret counsels and private agents.—Among his most zealous partizans, was Edward Somerset, lord Herbert, eldest son of the marquis of Worcester.—He was created earl of Glamorgan, and on his coming to Ireland on some real or pretended business, received secret powers from the king to bring about an accommodation with the confederates. Charles recommended him to Ormond, informing him that he had engaged this nobleman to forward the peace by every possible means ; expressing the greatest confidence in his integrity and affection ; but at the same time hinting some suspicion of his judgement. As Glamorgan was a Roman catholic, and connected with many of them by his marriage with the earl of Thomond's sister, his arrival was looked for with great earnestness by the confederates.

Every obstacle was at length got over with the laymen who composed the general assembly, except the repeal of the penal statutes, when the clergy started a new difficulty, and declared against any peace, which would

not give them the churches which they then possessed, and their prelates a right to sit in parliament. Though the sentiments of many of the confederates were more moderate, the issue of the battle of Naseby, so fatal to the cause of Charles, instead of inducing them to make common cause with the king against the puritans, from whom they could expect no concession, encouraged them to rise in their demands. Ormond now received fresh instructions ; he then briefly stated the sum of the concessions, which the confederates might expect ; he consented to the repeal of the penal statutes, and to shew his majesty's intention of employing equally all his subjects in Ireland, offered that a body of Roman catholics, consisting of 4000 foot and 600 horse, should be added to the king's army on perfecting the articles of peace.

An answer to these propositions was delayed, as the arrival of Glamorgan was every day expected ; at length he arrived and entered on a private treaty with the confederates. Abbate Scarampi, agent to the pope, opposed the plan of making peace publicly with the marquis and privately with the earl ; and of separating the religious from the civil articles, yet within one month after the earl's arrival the treaty was concluded. On the king's part it was agreed by Glamorgan, that Roman catholics should enjoy the public exercise of their religion, possess all the churches not actually enjoyed by protestants, exercise their own jurisdiction, and be exempted from that of the protestant clergy ; that an act of parliament should be passed to confirm these concessions, and to render Roman catholics capable of all offices of trust and dignity. On the part of the confederates it was stipulated that 10,000 men should be sent by order of their general assembly to serve the king, in England, Scotland, or Wales, under the earl, and such other officers, as the confederates should appoint ; and that two thirds of the revenues of the cler-

gy should be appropriated for the maintenance of this body for three years.

In explanation of these articles, the confederates for the present, receded from the demand of an act of parliament for securing the concessions to the clergy, as difficult and prejudicial to the king, Glamorgan engaging that they should be settled in another way. As it was still necessary to continue the public treaty with the lord lieutenant, Glamorgan, who was impatient for the honour of leading such a reinforcement as 10,000 men into England, solicited the marquis to make all the concessions he was authorised to grant, and for the rest to appeal to his majesty. On the renewal of the treaty with Ormond every article relative to the civil interests of the confederates was debated with temper, and adjusted without difficulty. When Ormond opposed the demands of a legal establishment, not only of the Romish worship, but of the papal jurisdiction, the Irish agents, conscious of the transactions with Glamorgan, proposed that no clause in the treaty should preclude the Roman Catholics from such farther graces as his majesty might be pleased to grant. This proposal was acceded to; lord Digby now arrived in Dublin, and laboured to conciliate the Irish and expedite their succours. It was mutually agreed, that all propositions relative to religion, the great obstacle to an accommodation, should be referred entirely to the king. The peace seemed on the point of being finally settled: the king every moment expected the embarkation of his Irish succours, when new difficulties arose and defeated the views of this unhappy prince.

During the whole of the negotiation a numerous party of the confederates was anxious for the restoration of the public peace; they saw the necessity of supporting the king; were willing to accept of moderate terms, and contented to enjoy the free exercise of their religion

without requiring a public establishment. The clergy inveighed against this desertion of the church ; their agents at Rome represented the danger of peace being concluded without due provision for the interests of religion ; to avert this, John Battista Rinuccini, archbishop of Fermo, was sent in quality of nuncio to Ireland ; he arrived at Kilkenny on the 12th of November.

On his arrival the supreme council communicated to him the articles they had agreed on, and Glamorgan communicated his powers and instructions. The nuncio objected to the terms of both the public and the private treaty ; he observed that there was no security for the performance of the religious articles, and that there was no mention of a Roman catholic lord lieutenant, no provision for catholic bishops and universities, and no stipulation for a continuance of the supreme council, or government of the confederates. The council endeavoured to obviate those objections ; various papers were drawn up, discussed, and answered, without effect. When the nuncio found it was impossible to make them amenable to his opinions, he summoned the Romish bishops then at Kilkenny, to a private meeting ; eight attended, and joined in a protestation against the peace. At length Glamorgan yielded to Rinuccini's demands ; impatient to remove every obstacle to his appearing at the head of an Irish army, he signed an instrument, by way of appendage to the former treaty, by which he engaged that when ten thousand Irish should be sent into England, the king should oblige himself never to employ any but a Roman catholic lord lieutenant ; to allow the Roman catholic bishops to sit in parliament, universities to be erected under their jurisdiction, and that the power of the supreme council should exist until all the private articles were ratified.

EXERCISES.

Was the treaty advantageous to the king? What did the rebels hope from Charles's distresses? What did Ormond represent to them? What made Charles so anxious to make peace? What induced him to empower Ormond to conclude a treaty? Why did Ormond tender his resignation? Was it accepted? What private measures did Charles take to forward the peace? Whom did he send to Ireland? What did the Romish clergy demand? What concession did the king make? What did the confederates agree too? What prevented the peace from being concluded? What objections did the nuncio make? Why was Glamorgan impatient to conclude the treaty? What terms did he grant privately?

CHAPTER IV.

Transactions at Sligo—The king disavows the treaty of Glamorgan—Peace proclaimed, the nuncio opposes it.

A new incident now occurred, which once more suspended the final adjustment of this treaty. Monro and his Scots, and the old British troops, finding themselves entirely neglected by the English parliament, showed some disposition to unite with Ormond, and adhere to the king's service; to prevent this union, the parliament determined on sending them money and necessaries, and in the mean time they dispatched their partizan, sir C. Coote, whom they had lately commissioned to command in Connaught, with a requisition to the British generals of the north, to assist him against the rebels in his government, and particularly to reduce the town of Sligo their principal place of strength. After some hesitation 4500 foot, and 500 horse were detached from the Scottish and English forces, and Sligo surrendered; the lord lieutenant ordered lord Taaffe to restrain those who

violated the cessation; at the same time the confederates of Kilkenny directed sir James Dillon, one of their officers, to march with 800 men to the assistance of the popish archbishop of Tuam, who was collecting forces for the recovery of Sligo. In the attempt to retake the town this prelate had nearly succeeded, when a reinforcement coming to the aid of the garrison, an action ensued, in which the archbishop fell; in his baggage was found a complete and authentic copy of the private treaty with Glamorgan, and in which was recited the earl's commission, and his oath to the confederates.

This important acquisition was immediately transmitted to the English parliament; it was printed, and industriously circulated to the dishonour of the king, the confusion of his protestant adherents, and the triumph of his enemies. The protestants were astonished and dismayed, and the ministers had before them the prospect of a general revolt of this whole party; it was necessary to do something, and this so speedily, as to manifest an impatience to vindicate the king's honour. Lord Digby seduced Glamorgan to Dublin, charged him before the privy council, of a suspicion of high treason, and moved that his person might be secured. Glamorgan was accordingly taken into custody, but after a confinement of a few days, was released and returned to Kilkenny. The king publicly disavowed the religious articles granted by Glamorgan, while he privately conveyed to him assurances of his confidence and friendship. Thus fresh difficulties were thrown in the way of the peace, but the chief obstacle arose from the opposition of the nuncio to any accommodation but on terms of great advantage to the Romish church. He produced a plan of a treaty said to be framed by the pope, which consisted of extraordinary provisions for the church, and prevailed on several of the clergy, to sign a decla-

ration in favour of this treaty. At length after a protracted negociation, the impatience of Glamorgan to lead the Irish succours into England, overcame every obstacle, and he signed an instrument, by which he engaged in the king's name to ratify such articles as satisfied the nuncio.

It now remained to make the final settlement with A. D. Ormond, which was effected on the 28th march 1646. in defiance of a stipulation with Rinuccini that no peace should be concluded before the 1st of May ; there was added to it a conditional article, by which the king was absolved from all his concessions, unless those succours were obtained, which were his great object : the confederates engaged to transport 6000 foot, well armed and provided, by the 1st day of April, and 4000 more in a month after. In the mean time the treaty was to be deposited in the hands of Clanricarde, as an instrument of no validity, until the troops should be sent away.

Thus near to its final conclusion was this treaty brought, at a moment when it could no longer be of any use to Charles : Ormond, as yet unacquainted with the extremity of the king's distress, gave orders for the embarkation of the first body of 6000 men ; but Glamorgan was unable to procure transports, according to his engagement, at the appointed time. The confederates therefore employed their troops against the parliamentarians in Munster, observing to Ormond that it was more for the king's interest, to clear one kingdom of his enemies, then to make a desperate attempt to assist him in England. The depredations of Coote and his parliamentary forces in Ulster became so great, that the confederates pressed Ormond to declare against them : they required him to admit, that the obstructions to the embarkation were sufficient to justify them against a

charge of violating their engagements, and represented, that any immediate publication of his treaty with them, must be attended by a like publication of Glamorgan's secret articles ; to prevent it they required him instantly to unite his forces with theirs, and act with vigour against the common enemy.

Ormond had just received intelligence that the king had entrusted himself to the Scottish army, and after some deliberation answered, that he could not unite with those who did not derive their authority from the king ; he was ready to accept the assistance of any of the king's subjects, and on publication of the peace might be more explicit ; he admitted that it might have been impracticable to send their forces into England, but the sums which they had engaged to supply were not yet remitted. As Glamorgan's articles had been disavowed by the king, he preemptorily insisted on their being suppressed, and that the treaty of Dublin should be instantly published ; and he declared that if these overtures were not accepted, he must seek some other way of recovering his authority in Ireland.

The confederates, now perceived the possibility of Ormond being driven to join the parliament, and instantly agreed to all his demands ; the articles concluded with Ormond were immediately to be published by mutual consent, when a letter was received from the king, forbidding the lieutenant from concluding a treaty with the Irish on any conditions. Suspence and confusion followed ; tho' Ormond might be persuaded that this letter had been extorted from Charles, it was not so easy to persuade others ; during his embarrassment lord Digby arrived from the continent, and confirmed Ormond's opinion. The prince of Wales assured the marquis by a letter, of his concurrence : these declarations satisfied both parties ; copies of the treaty were ex-

A. D. changed on the 27th of July: the council issued a proclamation, ratifying the articles, and all 1646. persons were enjoined to receive it with due respect and submission.

This peace however had as little influence in settling the affairs of the kingdom, as it had in restoring the fallen fortunes of Charles; so repugnant was it to the views of the prevailing faction in England, that lord Lisle was already appointed chief governor of Ireland by the parliament: the covenanters in Ulster despised the whole negotiation, as did the parliamentarians of Munster—through the whole course of the negotiation, Rinuccini had protested against any peace, but one framed by the pope, or to any civil treaty separate from the ecclesiastical; but as a powerful party of the confederates was earnest for a final accommodation, and were supported by general Preston and his troops; the nuncio perceived that neither his own exertions nor the opposition of the clergy could prevent the peace, without an army to support them against the supreme council. He therefore addressed himself to Owen O’Nial, now at the head of a formidable body, which subsisted chiefly on plunder; their depredations in Leinster had proved so oppressive, that the council of Kilkenny issued orders for opposing them; his application was so successful that Owen declared against the peace, and the Ulster Irish were induced to call themselves the nuncio’s soldiers—About the end of May, Owen had assembled 5000 foot, and 500 horse, and marched at their head against Armagh.

Monro, alarmed at this movement, made a forced march to Armagh with 6000 foot, and 800 horse, to surprise O’Nial; here he learned that the Irish army lay seven miles farther at Benburb, strongly posted between two hills, with a wood in its rear, and

on its right the river Blackwater; next morning Monro marched on the other side of the river in full view of the Irish army, to meet a reinforcement he expected; finding a ford unexpectedly, he crossed the river, and advanced on O'Nial. Instead of coming to a general engagement, the Irish general contrived to consume the day in skirmishing; in the evening, a detachment which he had sent to oppose the reinforcement expected by Monro, and had been foiled, was returning, and was for some time mistaken by Monro for his own men; at length alarmed at seeing the enemy reinforced by so considerable a troop, he prepared to retreat, and in the same moment was furiously attacked by the Irish: an English regiment commanded by lord Blaney kept their ground until he and most of his men were cut to pieces; the Scottish cavalry which was soon broken, threw the infantry into disorder, and a general rout followed. More than three thousand of the British forces fell in the field: the Irish lost only seventy; Monro fled, was vigorously pursued, and Ulster was on the point of being entirely reduced by O'Nial, when he was suddenly called into Leinster by the nuncio, to oppose the peace: he instantly marched with 10,000 men, the victory of Benburb having increased his forces to that number.

Encouraged by the prospect of this powerful support, the adherents of the nuncio openly opposed the peace in Limerick, and Waterford; the commissioners and all who were instrumental in the treaty were excommunicated; in these circumstances the supreme council earnestly pressed Ormond to repair to Kilkenny, to assist them in maintaining the peace against the violence of the nuncio, and to concert measures for checking the progress of lord Inchiquin, who at the head of the parliamentarians overran the southern province, in defiance of the proclamation of peace. Ormond accepted

this invitation, and attended by 1500 foot; and 500 horse, the marquis of Clanricarde, and lord Digby, repaired to Kilkenny; he was received with every demonstration of joy, but he soon learned that the nuncio had at length seduced Preston from the supreme council, and that this general and O'Nial were concerting measures for cutting off his retreat; there was now no time for expostulation, and Ormond with some difficulty regained the capital, where he prepared against a siege with little prospect of success from his present resources.

To those, on whom the whole power of the Roman catholics had now devolved, he could not submit, and at length sought relief from the parliament at London; he required an immediate reinforcement 3000 foot, and 500 horse, three month's pay for the army thus augmented, security for the persons and estates of his adherents, of all unoffending Roman catholics, and all such rebels as should by the lieutenant and council, with the consent of the English parliament be admitted as adherents to the king's protestant subjects; on these conditions he engaged to carry on the war as he should be directed by the English parliament. It was also intimated by his agents, that rather than the supplies should not be sent, the lieutenant and council would, with the king's permission, resign their patents, provided that their persons and estates were secured, and that they were indemnified from their public engagements; the latter overture only was accepted: commissioners were named to treat with Ormond for the surrender of his government and garrisons, and in the mean time 2000 foot, and 300 horse, were ordered for the immediate relief of Dublin.

EXERCISES.

Why did the English parliament send supplies to the Scottish troops? Who was sent to reduce Sligo? Who was directed by the confederates to assist in the recovery of Sligo? What became of the archbishop of Tuam? What was found in his baggage? What use was made of it? How did the king act? What made Glamorgan sign the treaty with the nuncio? What was the additional article? With whom was the treaty deposited? On what terms? What orders did Ormond give? Why did not Glamorgan employ the confederate troops? What observation did the confederates make to Ormond? What did they require of him? What was Ormond's reply? What induced the confederates to comply with his demands? What caused delay? Who was appointed governor by the parliament? Why did the nuncio apply to Owen O'Nial? What was his reception? When did the Ulster troops march? Who encountered them? With what success? Why was O'Nial summoned by the nuncio? Why did the supreme council invite Ormond to join them? Who accompanied him to Kilkenny? What caused him to return precipitately? Why did Ormond apply to the English parliament? What did he demand? What was granted?

CHAPTER V.

Triumph of the nuncio—Dublin besieged—Parliamentary troops arrive—Ormond treats with the parliament—Transactions in Munster.

RINUNCCINI now entered Kilkenny in triumph.—In a moment the power of the confederates and their council was at an end; all affairs civil and ecclesiastical were resigned to the direction of the nuncio, who ordered the members of the supreme council into custody, and Preston executed his commands—Glamorgan resigned himself entirely to this Italian prelate, who promised to make him lord lieutenant, when Ormond should be driven from Dublin; an event on which he reckoned

with so much certainty, that he wrote to Rome for instructions about adjusting the ceremonial between the papal minister and the new chief governor. The nuncio now prepared to reduce the capital; he chiefly relied on, and reposed all confidence in O'Nial and his troops, who were looked upon by the other Roman catholics and the protestants with nearly equal dread and horror. This partiality encouraged lord Digby to attempt an accommodation between Ormond and Preston, and to detach the latter from the nuncio. This failed, and Preston and O'Nial marched towards Dublin with 16000 foot and 1600 horse.

Proceeding with due formality, they sent their propositions to Ormond; but these were such, that distressed as he was, he refused to answer them. The agents of the parliament residing in Ulster refused him any succour except he resigned Drogheda into their hands. The Scots were so weakened by detachments sent home, and by the defeat at Benburb, that they could send him no assistance. He wished to remove his wife and children to the Isle of Man, but a ship was refused, except to take them to some port in the power of the parliament: rather than except this offer, he determined that they should share his danger, and relying on the winter as the last hope of dispersing the besiegers, prepared for the worst.

The besiegers took up their positions, but the jealousies and animosities of the leaders interfered with all their operations. The officers of each adopted the feeling of their leaders; those of Leinster expressed contempt and horror of the northerns, who in return insulted the others with the appellation of Englishmen.—Thus were the two armies ready to draw their swords against each other. This gave Digby and Clanricarde another opportunity of preventing the necessity of a submission to the parliament, whom they as well as Ormond, heartily

disliked : but the marquis had little expectation from the issue of the treaty now commenced. The nuncio objected to the propositions made by Clanricarde as insufficient. They were warmly supported by the moderate part of the confederates. In the midst of their debates, intelligence arrived that the forces of the English parliament were landed in Dublin : all started from the council ; O'Nial decamped in the night ; the supreme council repaired to Kilkenny, and were followed by the nuncio ; while Preston continued the negotiation with Clanricarde ; promising on security for the conditions he proposed, to observe the late peace, to obey the king and unite with Ormond against all his enemies.

The marquis had now to treat with the commissioners of the parliament : they concluded that he must purchase his supplies on any terms ; but as he found himself free from the difficulties which had lately threatened him with immediate danger, he objected to the indefinite terms in which they expressed their proposals, and declared it necessary to retain the charge entrusted to him. They proposed that their soldiers should be distributed into garrisons, until the king's pleasure should be known, and their instructions from parliament enlarged ; these propositions were rejected ; the troops were re-embarked, and conveyed to Ulster, where the Scots with difficulty consented to receive them.

Clanricarde at length succeeded in effecting an accommodation between Ormond and Preston : the latter undertook to act under the marquis, and by his orders marched on Kilkenny, where he was soon to be joined by the lord lieutenant and his forces. When Preston had begun his march, some agents of the nuncio suddenly appeared, commanded him to stop and disperse his troops, and, in case of disobedience, denounced sentence of excommunication against him and all his follow-

ers. The threat succeeded, and Preston joined the nuncio, and abandoned his newly formed alliance. Ormond was on his march to Kilkenny, when Clanricarde, who accompanied him, received a letter from Preston communicating his defection, and advising that Ormond should advance no farther, but wait the issue of a general assembly at Kilkenny. In three days Preston published a formal renunciation of his treaty, on pretence that the articles were not performed on the part of government. From the propositions, however, of this assembly, Ormond found it in vain to expect any succours; with which he could support the cause of Charles, without making sacrifices, which he deemed incompatible with the safety of his protestant subjects; he determined, therefore, to deposit the rights of the crown with the English parliament. The privy council concurred in this measure and it was approved by a parliament held in Dublin. He wrote to the commissioners of the parliament, offering to resign his government to them on their own terms.

A. D. To avert this decisive step, the confederates renewed their overtures. On one side they were pressed by lord Inchiquin, who at the head of 5000 foot, 1500 horse and some reinforcements lately sent to him by the parliament; had taken several places from them, and threatened Waterford with a siege. On the other side, they entertained no slight apprehensions from O'Nial and his followers, who looked on the other Roman catholics as intruders, and claimed the whole island as the property of the old Irish; still the influence of the nuncio and the clergy, who were governed by him, prevailed: and Ormond rejected their overtures again.

The lord lieutenant now concluded his treaty with the parliament. His second son, lord Richard Butler, afterwards earl of Arron, the earl of Roscommon, colo-

nel Chichester, and sir James Ware, were sent to England as hostages for the fulfilment of his engagements. Troops marched from Ulster to Dublin, and reinforcements sent from England were admitted into the city. Ormond engaged to deliver up Dublin, and all the king's garrisons, together with the sword of state, on the 21th of July, or sooner, on receiving four days notice. On the other side it was promised, that protestants should be protected; that all who chose might attend the marquis out of Ireland: that popish recusants, who had not engaged in the rebellion, might rest secure in the favour of parliament; and to secure to Ormond the sum of 14,000*l.* which they acknowledged he had expended in the king's service. The treaty was signed on the 19th of June.

No sooner was the treaty signed, than the commissioners forbade the use of the liturgy, for which they substituted the directory. On the 16th of July, Ormond was summoned to remove from the castle and deliver the regalia in four days. He resigned the castle to their own guards, but was allowed to defer giving up the sword until the day named in the treaty. The confederates dreaded the turbulence of the nuncio, and that O'Nial would make some desperate attempt on the departure of Ormond. Some of the most eminent of them, in a private conference with Digby, requested that the marquis should continue some time longer in Ireland: but on the day appointed he embarked, and landed at Bristol.

The anarchy and confusion which now prevailed in Ireland, were scarcely less than what the kingdom had ever before experienced. Colonel Michael Jones was appointed governor of the capital by the parliament, and commander of their forces in Leinster. His soldiers plundered the inhabitants with impunity. for it was not in the power of Jones to preserve discipline among men whose neces-

ties he could not supply. Three different armies of Roman catholics were stationed in different quarters.—Owen O’Nial and his followers were enemies equally to the king and the English parliament, professing obedience only to the pope and his nuncio. Preston and his army wished for the return of Ormond, and were decidedly opposed to the parliament. The Scots in Ulster, were offended at the late proceedings in England, and averse to the present government. In Munster, lord Inchiquin, mortified by some attempts to remove him from his command, was disposed to abandon the parliament on the same principle he had deserted the king.

Lord Digby, who still remained in Dublin, lost no opportunity in practising against the parliamentarians, and effecting the return of Ormond.—His chief reliance was on the armies of Leinster and Munster, and with their leaders he formed his plans. The Munster army was commanded by lord Taaffe, the Leinster, consisting of 7000 foot and 1000 horse, by Preston; with this force he advanced into the English quarters, reduced Naas, and repelled Jones in two skirmishes. On Preston’s investing Trim, Jones marched out of Dublin; when Preston, by the advice of Digby, attempted to surprize Dublin by a forced march, he was pursued by Jones, and at Dungan hill the armies came to an engagement. The numbers on each side were nearly equal, for Jones had been lately reinforced by some troops from Ulster. The English gained a decided victory; Jones became master of the enemy’s arms, cannon, baggage, and a number of prisoners; Preston fled to Carlow with his horse, and there collected the remains of his infantry. As the nuncio and his party were apprehensive, that Preston would, if he became master of it, give up Dublin to Ormond, they were not displeased at his defeat.

They recalled O'Nial from some petty hostilities he carried on in Connaught, and entrusted him with the defence of Leinster; Preston was ordered by the supreme council to resign the greater part of his remaining forces to his rival. O'Nial extended his depredations to the walls of Dublin, but cautiously avoided coming to a general engagement.

In the south, Inchiquin acted with vigour both to obtain supplies, and to allay the suspicions of the parliament. The army commanded by Taafe, being now of great consequence, he did not like to risk it in a general battle. Inchiquin took the castle of Cahir, and marched to Cashel without opposition; the inhabitants fled to their cathedral, seated on a rock, well fortified and furnished with a strong garrison. Inchiquin proposed to leave them unmolested, on condition of their advancing him three thousand pounds and a month's pay for his army; this offer was rejected; the place was then stormed, and taken with considerable slaughter of both citizens and soldiers; among the slain were twenty ecclesiastics. Inchiquin became master of a valuable booty; but still unprovided for keeping the field, on the approach of winter he dispersed his army into garrisons. The nuncio now insisted on the necessity of avenging the fall of the clergy at Cashel; he imputed the inactivity of Taafe to treachery, and ascribed to him all the calamities of the Roman catholic cause; he was joined by his whole party, and lord Taafe was obliged to take the field in November—Inchiquin collected his forces. The armies met at Knocknoness: Taafe was defeated with the loss of 3000 of his best troops. Inchiquin got possession of six thousand arms, and all the enemy's baggage and artillery.

EXERCISES.

Who did the nuncio order into custody? Why did he write to Rome? On whom did he depend? Why did lord Digby attempt an accommodation between Ormond and Preston? Who marched to attack Dublin? Did Ormond reject their proposals? Why would not the parliamentary agents support him? What did he apply for? Was he refused? On what grounds did lord Digby renew his attempt of accommodation? What intelligence dispersed the besiegers? Why did not Ormond accept the supplies? When were the troops received? What did Preston undertake to do? What prevented him? What did he publish? What was Ormond at length forced to do? Why did the confederates renew their overtures? Who were sent to England as hostages? On what terms did Ormond resign the government? What was the first order of the commissioners? What did the confederates request? What enemies had the parliament in Ireland? What did lord Digby try to effect? On whom did he rely? Where did Preston engage Jones? Who conquered? Where did Preston retreat to? Why did his defeat please the nuncio? To whom was Preston ordered to resign his command? Why did not Taaffe oppose the progress of Inchiquin? What posts were taken by Inchiquin? What proposal did he make to the inhabitants of Cashel? What induced lord Taaffe to give battle to Inchiquin? Where did they engage and what was the issue?



CHAPTER VI.

Proceedings of the general assembly.—Nuncio flies to O’Nial.—Ormond returns.

A CONSIDERABLE number of the confederates were determined by these disasters to abandon the counsels of the nuncio, and make another effort for peace. It was first necessary to secure a majority in the general assembly now summoned to Kilkenny. To counteract their designs, Rinunccini prevailed on the supreme council to

issue writs to eleven persons whom he had recommended to Rome to be made bishops. It was contended in vain by the lawyers that they could not sit until they were consecrated. The nuncio bore down all opposition. Ulster had usually sent sixty-three members to the general assembly; nine only attended now. The nuncio contended that these nine should have sixty-three votes. This proposition was, however, rejected, and the assembly almost unanimously declared for peace: they resolved to send agents to France, to the queen of England, and the prince, who had long before retired to that kingdom, the only persons with whom they could open a treaty. It was also resolved, at the instance of the nuncio, to send agents to Rome and Madrid. These agents, were all publicly instructed to insist on those terms which were so often rejected by Ormond. But Muskerry and Browne who were to wait on the queen, privately agreed not to press those articles which would ensure the rejection of their overture.

The marquis of Ormond had, on leaving Ireland, been permitted to wait on the king at Hampton Court: he was graciously received by Charles, and consulted with confidence. On learning that a warrant had issued for his apprehension, he retired to France, and on the arrival of the Irish agents, assisted the queen in her negotiations with them.

A. D. 1648. Mean time the confederates saw the necessity of coming to an understanding with some of their enemies, to enable them to oppose the parliamentarians. The nuncio recommended a truce, either with the Scots of Ulster or with lord Inchiquin.—The latter was prepared to meet their wishes: he had shewn some symptoms of disaffection to the parliament, and though he still acted against the confederates, he held a secret correspondence with Ormond. Lord Broghill, his se-

cond in command, had conceived some displeasure against this nobleman. Ormond effected a reconciliation between them, and engaged Broghill in their design. An emissary was dispatched to the confederates to treat about a cessation. Taafe and Preston bound themselves to support the king's rights, and obey his lieutenant; Inchiquin entered into the same engagement. The Scots of Ulster gave assurances of uniting with Ormond, not only against O'Nial, but against the parliament. Some officers of Inchiquin's having discovered his design, he was obliged to avow his return to his allegiance, before measures were sufficiently advanced; and particularly before the cessation with the Irish was concluded. As the nuncio perceived that all his views would be destroyed by the union about to be formed, he and some of the clergy protested against the cessation. It was, however, at length resolved on by the supreme council, with a clause of mutual assistance, against all who should oppose it by hostilities.

Rinuncini now fled from Kilkenny to O'Nial, and pressed him to march against the betrayers of the church. He next excommunicated all who favoured the cessation; in this, however, he was supported by very few of the clergy, and it was not attended with the same effects as his former censures.—Still he influenced a strong party, many of whom acted on private views also, and war was declared by O'Nial against the supreme council. Finding himself in a little time unable to cope with the forces of Preston, Inchiquin, and Taafe, he made overtures to Jones, who readily consented to an accommodation, and allowed him to march through Leinster to attack their common enemy. He formed a design of surprizing Kilkenny and seizing the supreme council; his design, however, was discovered and defeated by Inchiquin.—A general assembly now met at Kilkenny,

declared O'Nial a traitor, and by their president requested Rinunccini to quit the kingdom.

Affairs were in this state when the marquis of Ormond arrived at Cork. He was received with all the respect due to a chief governor; his object was to unite all royalists protestants and catholics, the only means now left of rescuing Charles from impending ruin. It was in the first place necessary to conciliate the munster army commanded by Inchiquin. Having been disappointed by France, he had brought no supplies, and had recourse to promises, which for the present satisfied the soldiers.—He was in the next place to treat with the assembly at Kilkenny. His commission as lord lieutenant still subsisted, but that for concluding a peace had determined on the treaty made in 1646. The queen and prince had given him power to treat, but in such a transaction he required immediate instructions from the king. Charles, among his other concessions to the parliament commissioners, had just agreed that an act should pass, rescinding all treaties made with the Irish, and authorising the houses to prosecute the war in Ireland. He instantly informed Ormond of this, but desired him to take no notice of his public commands, during his present state of restraint, but to obey those of the queen. He had therefore now an additional authority to satisfy those who might object to the insufficiency of his powers from the queen and prince.—Negociations were accordingly commenced; and, after some interruptions from a mutinous spirit among Inchiquin's army; and several protracted discussions on different articles, were still pending, when the remonstrance of the army to the parliament of England, requiring that the king should be brought to justice, was received by lord Inchiquin and sent to Kilkenny; this silenced all objections in the protestant army; the confederates, alarmed at the king's danger and

their own, acceded to the terms proposed by Ormond ; the treaty was concluded, and peace proclaimed ; the Romish clergy expressed their satisfaction, and by declarations, and circular letters recommended the strict observance of the peace.

In civil affairs, the articles were generally copied from those of the year forty-six ; in religion, the marquis conceded some points he had hitherto refused—all the penal statutes were to be repealed, and the Roman catholics left to the free and secure exercise of their religion ; they were not expressly allowed their ecclesiastical jurisdiction, nor the grants of churches, and church livings, nor were they expressly restrained in those points ; they were secured in the possession of such churches as they then held, until the king's pleasure should be freely and authentically declared. The marquis also consented to divest himself of the full power of his office, and to hold it in common with twelve persons called commissioners of trust ; without the approbation of a majority of these commissioners, he could neither levy soldiers, raise money, nor erect garrisons.

Before intelligence of this treaty reached London, the English commons had put a period to the contest between them and Charles, by beheading their king. Ormond immediately proclaimed the prince of Wales A. D. king, and caused the same proclamation to be made in all places subject to his authority ; he 1649. was confirmed in his government by the new king, and endeavoured to reconcile if possible, some of the many enemies by whom he was surrounded. He first applied to O'Nial who still declared for the nuncio against the royalists, but he consented to a treaty ; it was however broken off by the commissioners of trust, who hated and dreaded him : he next applied to Coote, who held Derry for the parliament ; he returned vague and

general professions; in the last place he attempted to practise with Jones, but he declared his firm resolution of adhering to his principles and party—on the other hand the British forces in Ulster declared for the king, and blocked up sir Charles Coote in Derry.

Ormond's difficulties, however, did not arise solely from the opposition of his enemies; the want of money and necessaries to enable him to bring an army into the field, was what pressed on him most severely, the commissioners of trust taking little care to provide magazines or money. Prince Rupert had arrived on the southern coast with the fleet, and from him the marquis expected some assistance; in this too he was disappointed. Rupert endeavoured to raise a party for the king, in opposition to Ormond; he refused to block up the harbour of Dublin, which the marquis intended to invest; refused to aid the blockade of Derry, or pay Ormond the money which the king had ordered him to give his lieutenant for the public service. Ormond now earnestly pressed the king to come into Ireland, and he prepared to comply with this request; but so much time was wasted on the continent that Ormond was obliged to take the field, depending on his own resources—his chief object was to reduce Dublin. After some minor operations, in which the royalists were successful, tho' unable to take advantage of their successes, Ormond with 7000 infantry, and 4000 horse, formed the blockade of Dublin. Lord Dillon, with 2500 men, took up a position on the north side of the city; Ormond, with the remainder of the army, encamped at Rathmines. Coote had now, with the assistance of O'Nial, rescued himself from his dangerous situation in Derry; Jones received a strong reinforcement, a considerable quantity of money, and various necessaries—by the ships which brought these succours,

Ormond received intelligence, that Dublin was considered to be now sufficiently secure; that Cromwell lay at Bristol with a large army, and that he intended to land in Munster.—As many in this province were devoted to the ruling power in England, and the royal garrisons were weak, it was resolved that Inchiquin should march to the south with three regiments of horse; it was at the same time determined to continue the blockade, but as their diminished numbers required greater caution, it was the opinion of a council of war that the marquis should retire to a more secure position than his present; this however was opposed by many, who objected to a movement which had the appearance of a retreat. They observed that by gaining the castle of Baggot-rath, which might be fortified in one night, the enemy's horse would be cut off from forage, and the besiegers works could be advanced with security to the river, so as to cut off the garrison from farther succours—this plan was adopted. At the close of day an officer named Purcel, was detached with 1500 men to secure the castle, but the night was consumed in traversing the country, before he reached the castle and began his works: in the morning it was discovered that the garrison had advanced some parties: a general engagement was brought on, in which Ormond was defeated, with the loss 1500 privates and 300 officers made prisoners, and 600 slain, many after they had accepted quarter, and laid down their arms; together with his arms and ordnance.

On the 15th of August, Cromwell landed in Dublin with 8000 foot, 4000 horse, 20,000*l.* in money, a train of artillery, and all other necessaries of war.

EXERCISES.

What effect had these disasters on some of the confederates? What means did the nuncio take to prevent a majority against him in the general assembly? What resolutions were adopted by the assembly? What were the public instructions given to the agents sent to the queen? What the private? Where did the marquis of Ormond go on leaving Ireland? How did the confederates oppose the parliamentarians? Whom did Ormond engage to second his design? Which of the confederate generals bound themselves to support the king? What assurances did the Scots of Ulster give? What obliged Inchiquin to declare himself sooner than he intended? How did the marquis act? To whom did O'Nial make overtures? What resolution did the general assembly come to with respect to O'Nial? What did Ormond proceed to do on his return? To what act had Charles publicly consented? What private instructions did Ormond receive from the king? What made all parties agree to the treaty? What concessions did Ormond make to the Roman Catholics? What occurred in England to end the contest? How did Ormond act on the death of Charles the first? Who confirmed him in his government? Whom did he try to conciliate? How was his treaty with O'Nial broken off? Who blocked up sir Charles Coote in Derry? From whom did Ormond expect assistance? What was refused? What did Ormond want the king to do? What was Ormond's chief object? How did he attempt it? What intelligence did he receive? What castle did he attempt to take? How was an engagement brought on prematurely? What was the result?

 CHAPTER VII.

Military operations—Marquis of Antrim attempts to seduce Ormond's soldiers—Protestants of Munster declare for Cromwell—Ormond retires—General submission—Division of forfeited lands.

CROMWELL having regulated all civil and military affairs in Dublin, prepared to reduce Drogheda. Ormond foreseeing that this town would be his first object, had repaired the fortifications, and strengthened the gar-

rison, expecting that the numbers of the enemy would be diminished by the severities of a seige ; but Cromwell, rejecting the slow operation of regular approaches, assaulted the town three times ; he was repulsed twice ; placing himself at the head of the troops the third time, he carried the town : quarter was promised to all who should lay down their arms ; this promise was observed till all resistance was over. The garrison was then put to the sword, with the exception of thirty, who were transported as slaves to Barbadoes. The object of this barbarous policy was to deter other garrisons from resisting the arms of the regicide. Trim, Dundalk, Carlingford, Lisburne, Belfast, and Colerain were speedily subdued ; and sir George Monro was driven by sir Charles Coote from the counties of Down and Antrim.

Mean time Ormond, with only 1500 foot, and 700 horse, could attempt no enterprise of moment ; jealousies between him and the commissioners of trust, prevented any cordial co-operation against the common enemy ; when on the approach of winter, it was necessary to put the troops into garrisons, Wexford, Waterford, and Limerick peremptorily refused either to obey orders, or to receive soldiers. Ormond now pressed the king to repair to Ireland, as the only means of restoring his cause in that kingdom ; Charles consented, and ships were prepared to convoy him from Jersey, but he listened to other councils, and accepted the proposals of the Scottish commissioners.

Notwithstanding the advanced season of the year, Cromwell did not suspend his operations ; with 9000 men he marched towards Wexford : hitherto the inhabitants had neglected all means of defence, and at first proposed to open their gates to the enemy. At length Ormond succeeded in persuading them to receive succours ; 2000 men were thrown into the town, and Or-

mond marched to Ross there to await the event. The governor of the castle betrayed it to Cromwell on the first fire; the citizens, on finding their own guns turned on the town, began a treaty with the enemy, but the soldiers deserting the walls, the enemy rushed in and the garrison experienced the fate of their fellow sufferers in Drogheda. Cromwell proceeded to besiege Ross, which soon surrendered; Ireton invested Duncannon which was bravely defended by the governor, Wogan. Lord Inchiquin attempted to intercept a reinforcement sent from Dublin to Cromwell, but he failed. Ormond had concluded a treaty with O'Nial, who soon after died; on being joined by some of Owen's troops, the marquis prepared to dispute with Cromwell the passage of the Barrow; finding that he was too late to oppose this passage, he retired to Kilkenny before the superior numbers of the enemy; being joined there by the remainder of O'Nial's army, he again advanced to give battle to Cromwell, who had marched to within five miles of the city: but this general had suddenly passed the Suir, and was marching against Waterford; this city had hitherto rejected the assistance of lord Castlehaven, who had been sent with some troops to provide for its security. While Inchiquin was detached to recover Carrick, which Cromwell had surprised, Ormond moved towards Waterford; the citizens at length accepted of 1500 of the Ulster troops; Ormond then retired to Clonmel, where he joined the detachment under Inchiquin, which had failed in its attempt on Carrick. Finding it necessary to throw additional troops into Waterford, he again marched to that city; discovering that the enemy were preparing to raise the siege in confusion, he proposed to fall on their rear, but the citizens of Waterford refused to supply boats for ferrying his troops over the river, until the opportunity of destroying the enemy was lost.

Fresh disappointments awaited the marquis on his return to Clonmel. The marquis of Antrim, who had been one of the agents sent by the supreme council to the queen, and once expected to be made lord lieutenant of Ireland, was detected in tampering with Ormond's troops. Cromwell, before his departure from London, had engaged lord Broghill to disavow the cause of Charles. This nobleman now arrived in the south, and at his instance, the Munster protestants abandoned the confederates and declared for Cromwell. Thus this general found repose in the chief garrisons of Munster for his harrassed troops, without the necessity of making a difficult march to Dublin.

It was necessary that the troops of Ormond should now receive some respite; but except Kilkenny and Clonmel, no city would receive them; they were therefore dismissed by Ormond to provide for themselves in the best manner they could. In the mean time, the parliamentarians had made themselves masters of the whole northern province, except Claremont and Enniskillen. Distrust and jealousy occupied the place of union and concord among the royalists. Ormond requested the king's permission to withdraw from this scene of disorder; Charles consented, whenever it became unavoidable: but as his treaty with the Scots was to produce a diversion in England which might have an influence on his Irish interests, Ormond remained. Cromwell resumed his operations, and subdued Kilkenny and Clonmel in succession: each of these towns was gallantly defended, but receiving no succours from without, were obliged to yield. Cromwell then resigned the command of the army to Ireton, and returned to England.

In order to prosecute the war with effect, Ormond particularly wished to put Limerick in a state to

sustain a siege. Accordingly he represented to the citizens the necessity of receiving a strong garrison, but his proposal was rejected. Ormond seemed now to have lost all authority. The Roman catholic bishops held an assembly at Jamestown, in which they required the marquis to withdraw from the kingdom; they enjoined the people to obey no orders but those of the congregation of clergy, until a general assembly should be convened. The forces of Clanricarde, who was marching to protect Athlone, were discharged from all obedience to government, by a sentence of excommunication against all who should adhere to the lord lieutenant. The commissioners of trust, the nobility, and many of the clergy, pressed the congregation to support the government, but with little effect; and at length Ormond, having appointed the marquis of Clanricarde lord deputy, embarked at Galway for France.

Clanricarde accepted this office with difficulty; he doubted on what principles it was that obedience was promised to his orders, and how far they were founded in attachment to the king: after some negotiation with the assembly, and several explanations, he consented to act. When Ireton learned that Ormond had quitted the kingdom, he sent agents to the general assembly to engage them to treat with the parliamentarians. This proposal, was, after some opposition, rejected.—The Roman catholics then applied to the duke of Lorrain, and a negotiation was opened for the of putting the kingdom under the protection of that prince. This design, however, was abandoned by the duke after a treaty had been executed, investing him with the sovereignty of Ireland under the title of protector royal.

Ireton having resolved to besiege Limerick, sir Charles Coote was ordered to advance on Sligo. The Irish prepared to relieve this town, when Coote suddenly

passing over the Curlew mountains, invested Athlone, and before Clanricarde could collect his forces to oppose him, the town was taken. Coote pursuing his advantage, marched against Galway. The deputy, anxious to preserve this important post, summoned Castlehaven to his assistance, but scarcely had this lord marched a few miles, with a detachment of 4000 men, when a party, which he had left to defend a pass over the Shannon, fled precipitately. His whole army caught the panic and dispersed. At the same time, an officer who had been stationed at Killaloe abandoned his post; Limerick was thus exposed to the enemy on every side, and Ireton commenced the siege in form. The deputy offered to shut himself up in the city and share its danger, but this offer was refused by the citizens, who entrusted the defence to Hugh O'Nial, the officer who had so bravely defended Clonmel: with the same bravery he now exerted himself, but in vain. The city was betrayed to Ireton. Twenty four persons were excluded from mercy; O'Nial was tried and condemned, and he was with difficulty saved from the fury of the republican.

Galway, the only considerable post which now held out, was the next object. The death of Ireton encouraged for some time a resistance in this city, but the exemplary severities, practised under the commands of Ludlow, on all who had joined the Irish since the arrival of Cromwell, produced an universal dismay. Submission was offered to Ludlow in the name of the nation, by an assembly held in Leinster, and another in Galway; but no general treaty of submission would be admitted. During the consternation which followed this answer, Preston, the governor of Galway, fled, and the town surrendered. Clanricarde maintained a hopeless struggle for some time longer, when he accepted conditions from the republicans. He was allowed to retire

with 3000 men into the service of any prince in amity with England.

A. D. Fleetwood, son-in-law to Cromwell, was sent to Ireland by the English parliament, as commander in chief of the forces, while this body debated two acts relative to this kingdom—one for the confiscation of all lands belonging to rebels; another for adjusting the claims of adventurers, and vesting them with their Irish estates. Mean while, Fleetwood found the inhabitants of all orders submitting to the terms which had been imposed: if accused of any murders committed in the beginning of the rebellion, they were to be tried; if convicted, they were to be incapable of pardon and their lands confiscated. Those who had only assisted in the war, were to forfeit two thirds of their estates, and to be banished. The marquis of Ormond, lord Inchiquin, Bramhal, the protestant bishop of Derry, and the earl of Roscommon, were especially excepted from pardon of either life or estate.

Commissions issued in the several provinces for the erection of an high court of justice, for trying those accused of murder. In Connaught, lord Mayo was condemned; in Munster, Colonel William Bagnal; and in the north, sir Phelim O’Nial. While Fleetwood had the sole command of the army, Edmund Ludlow, Miles Corbet, John Jones, and John Weaver, were united with him in the civil government, under the title of commissioners of parliament. These zealous assertors of civil and religious liberty now proceeded to divide Ireland according to their principles of republican justice. To satisfy the arrears due to the English army, a moiety of lands forfeited in nine counties were assigned to the soldiers who had served since the arrival of Cromwell; the other

A. D.
1653.

moiety was accepted by the adventurers in discharge of their demands. The claims of those who had served against the rebels before the arrival of Cromwell, were not considered sufficiently strong to obtain any other recompense than a small portion of lands in Wicklow and the adjacent counties, inadequate to a fourth part of their arrears. Connaught was reserved entirely for the Irish, and to it they were exclusively confined. After these assignments were made, the counties of Dublin, Kildare, Carlow, and Cork remained still unappropriated, and were, with the lands of the bishops, deans and chapters, reserved by parliament, to be hereafter disposed of at their pleasure.

EXERCISES.

What town did Cromwell first besiege? What preparations had Ormond made for its defence? How did Cromwell attack the town? What became of the garrison? What was the object of this cruelty? What other towns yielded to the republicans? What prevented Ormond's acting against the enemy? What occurred when he wished to put the troops into garrisons? What advice did Ormond give to Charles? What occurred at the siege of Wexford? What reinforcements joined the marquis? What did he attempt then? What occurred at Waterford? What was the conduct of the marquis of Antrim? Who induced the Munster protestants to abandon the confederates? What advantage did this procure to Cromwell? Why did Ormond dismiss his troops? Why did he request the king's leave to quit Ireland? When did Cromwell venture to England? What reception did Ormond's proposal to garrison Limerick meet with? What assembly was held at Jamestown? Whom did Ormond appoint his deputy on leaving Ireland? What step did Ireton take on Ormond's departure? What enabled Ireton to commence the siege of Limerick? What offer did Clanricarde make to the citizens of Limerick and how did they act? What effect did Ireton's death produce? What offers were made to Ludlow by the assemblies of Leinster and Galway? What conditions did Clanricarde make with the republicans? Who was appointed commander in chief by the parliament? What acts relative to Ireland were debated in the English parliament? On what conditions did the inhabitants submit? Who were condemned by the high courts of justice? How were the forfeited lands disposed of?

CHAPTER VIII.

Cromwell declared protector—His death—Restoration of Charles II.

MEANTIME, another revolution was going on in England; Cromwell, discovering the inconveniency of acting on those republican principles on which he had raised himself to power, had dissolved the parliament, and was declared by a council of his officers, protector of the commonwealth of England, Ireland, and Scotland. The intelligence of this change was variously received in Ireland; by the army, who were dissatisfied with the commissioners, with great satisfaction; by Ludlow and the zealous republicans, with abhorrence and indignation. The proposal to proclaim the protector, was carried by a majority of one voice. Ludlow resigned his place as commissioner, but kept his post as lieutenant-general.

A. D. Cromwell sent his son Henry to Ireland to reconcile men's minds to the usurpation, and to
1657. prepare the way for his future government of the kingdom. Henry soon discovered that the commissioners had done little more than make orders for the distribution of lands, reserving large proportions to themselves. He endeavoured to reconcile Ludlow and gain him to his father's interest, but without effect.

The instrument of government required that a parliament should be summoned for the three nations, now united in one commonwealth: thirty members were to be chosen for Ireland: the commissioners were desired to transmit their advice relative to the election of these members. They were of opinion that an election should

not be attempted, as persons might be chosen in some places not well affected to the English interest, and that the protector should call the thirty members by writ to the parliament. Ludlow on this occasion interfered, and exhorted the commissioners not to resign the form, as well as the reality of liberty, and observed that the influence of government could procure the return of the very persons desired; Fleetwood complied, the commissioners agreed on the persons to be returned, and the elections were in general conformable to their wishes.

Notwithstanding this service, Cromwell put an end to the authority of these commissioners, and appointed Fleetwood lord deputy for three years: this change was looked on by many as too near an approach to a regal form of government; the army became mutinous, and Ludlow was active in inflaming the discontented. Cromwell directed Fleetwood to obtain the surrender of his commission. Ludlow refused to resign a commission he had received from the parliament; he promised however to appear before Cromwell, but it was considered to be more judicious to keep him in Ireland. To diminish his influence, his regiment was disbanded.

A. D. Henry Cromwell was again employed in Ireland, first as a military officer, and then as lord deputy 1655. in the room of Fleetwood; he found the army discontented and refractory; one party petitioned for the restoration of their former deputy, another petitioned in favour of Henry, and the equitable spirit of his administration soon established him so firmly in the hearts of all, that they became entirely reconciled to his fathers government; addresses were transmitted from every part of the kingdom, declaring the resolutions of the inhabitants to support the protector against all his opponents.

A. D. On the death of Cromwell, the same assurances of support were renewed to his son Richard, 1658. who continued his brother in the government of Ireland, by the title of lord lieutenant; the English parliament afterwards changed this form of government, entrusted it to commissioners, recalled Henry Cromwell, and made Ludlow commander of the forces.

The royalists of Ireland had conceived strong hopes that the restoration of the king would follow the abdication of Richard Cromwell; the majority of the English race, and many of the Irish, were devoted to his interests.—The Scots of Ulster were so dreaded by the usurpers, that the severest ordinances had been made for excluding their countrymen from Ireland, and the greatest jealousy was entertained of the intentions of lord Broghill; these dispositions in favour of the king were increased by the severity of the commissioners. Lord Broghill, sir Charles Coote, and more than two hundred officers were dismissed from the army; thus those who before were wavering, were confirmed in their determination of attempting the restoration of the king.

Ludlow had been recalled, and colonel John Jones, one of the late king's judges, was appointed to the command of the forces—a number of the royalists at length assembled in Dublin, under the pretence of petitioning for a general council of officers, to consider the present state of affairs; their petition was rejected, but they suddenly seized the castle, secured Jones, and two of his colleagues, and declared for a free parliament. Sir Charles Coote secured the town of Galway, changed the governor, surprised Athlone, and then marched to Dublin, and impeached Ludlow and the commissioners of high treason, Youghal, Clonmel, Carlow, Limerick, and Drogheda, next fell into the hands of the royalists,

and in one week most of the considerable garrisons of of the kingdom, declared for a free parliament.

Charles was now invited to repair to Ireland, and take advantage of the favourable sentiments that were manifested towards him, but it was conceived to be more prudent for him to await the issue of affairs in England; as the proceedings of Monk gave rise to the greatest expectations, a council of officers now assumed the government of Ireland; on a petition from the magistrates of Dublin, they summoned a convention of estates; the council of state in England ordered this convention to be dissolved, but no attention was paid to those orders—Ludlow now arrived in the port of Dublin; the council of officers attempted to seize him, but he, instead of landing, proceeded to Duncannon, and endeavoured to inflame several commanders against the proceedings in Dublin. But the English parliament, now under the influence of Monk, recalled him and their other commissioners—sir Hardress Waller was then the only dangerous opponent to the king; he had sat as one of the king's judges, and was averse from the restoration; he was, however, soon secured and sent in custody to England.

The convention and council of officers now openly avowed their intention of restoring the king, and the only point debated was, whether he should be restored unconditionally, or whether they should stipulate for a confirmation of estates to the soldiers and adventurers; it was after some debate determined, to submit all their interests implicitly to the king; a very few only opposed the restoration. The declaration of Breda was readily accepted. Charles was proclaimed in all the great towns of Ireland with every manifestation of joy; the convention voted a present of 20,000*l.* to the king, 4000*l.* to the duke of York, and 2000*l.* to the duke of Gloucester.

EXERCISES.

How was the news of Cromwell's being proclaimed protector received in Ireland? Was he proclaimed in Ireland? Whom did Cromwell send to Ireland? How did the commissioners propose calling a parliament? Was their proposal agreed to? Who was appointed lord deputy? For what term of years? What did Ludlow refuse? How was his influence lessened? Who succeeded Fleetwood? What was the conduct of Henry Cromwell? What did the English parliament do? What hopes did the Irish royalists entertain? What determined them to attempt the restoration of the king? Who was appointed to command the forces? Under what pretence did the royalists assemble in Dublin? What was their conduct? Who impeached Ludlow? Who assumed the government? What orders were sent from England? Were they attended to? Who was seized and sent to England? What did the convention openly avow? What was discussed? What was the issue? What sum was voted to the king? What to the duke of York? What to the duke of Gloucester?

 RECAPITULATION.

What was the state of the rebels after the battle of Kilrush? What effect did the landing of the Scots produce? What prevented their entirely subduing the rebels? When the rebels had some intentions of abandoning their enterprize, what occurred to prevent them? What part did lord Leven take in Irish affairs? From what foreign country did the rebels receive assistance? What plan of government did the rebels form for themselves? What declaration was made by the assembly at Kilkenny? What act of the assembly caused dissenion among the leaders? What were the parties in Ireland, and how were they produced? Whom did the commons of England send to Ireland, and for what purpose? In Charles's distress whose services did he determine to accept? By what means did Charles hope to receive assistance from Ireland? What did the rebels object to at the first opening a negociation with them? What opposition did the justices give to a cessation of hostilities? What was the issue of Ormond's expedition against Ross and Wexford? Why was one of the lords justices removed, and why were not both? What circumstance proves the poverty of the kingdom at this period? When the subject of a temporary cessation of hostilities was discussed, what were the preliminaries proposed on each side? What proposal did Ormond make in the privy council relative to the cessation? What

were the propositions made at Castle Martin? What opinion did Ormond form from the conference at Castle Martin, and how did he act? How did the king shew his anxiety for the treaty? When was it concluded? How was it received? What benefit did Charles derive from this treaty? What was the result of the conference at Oxford between the king and the agents of both parties? Why did Ormond wish to resign? By whose agency did Charles now endeavour to effect a peace with the confederates? What were the terms of the private treaty made with Glamorgan? Whose arrival interrupted this arrangement? What objections did the nuncio make? What terms were at length agreed on? What incident interrupted the final adjustment of the treaty? What steps were taken to disavow the treaty made by Glamorgan? When and on what conditions was the treaty at length concluded? What was the state of the parties after this treaty was published? By whom was the battle of Benburb fought, and who gained the victory there? Why was Ormond requested by the supreme council to repair to Kilkenny? Why did he quit Kilkenny? How did the nuncio act after Ormond left Kilkenny? How did O'Nial and Preston carry on the siege of Dublin? How was the siege raised? What negotiations did Ormond now carry on and what was the result? What prevented Preston's continuing to co-operate with Ormond? On what conditions did Ormond surrender to the parliament? What did the commissioners of parliament do as soon as the treaty was signed? What was the state of parties after Ormond's departure? What operations led to the battle of Dunganhill? What operations led to the battle of Knocknones? What occurred in the general assembly now convened at Kilkenny? With whom did Ormond carry on a correspondence after his departure from Ireland? What was the state of affairs when the marquis of Ormond returned? What did he then endeavour to accomplish? What hastened the conclusion of the peace? What were the terms of the peace, and when was it concluded? What part of the treaty particularly obstructed Ormond's subsequent operations? How did prince Rupert act? What led to the battle of Rathnines? When did Cromwell land? Where did he commence his operations? How did he treat the garrison of Drogheda? How did some of the towns act when Ormond wished to put his troops into winter quarters? What did Ormond now propose to the king? How did Cromwell obtain possession of Wexford? By whose means were the protestants of Munster induced to declare for Cromwell? What benefit did he derive from this? When did Cromwell return to England? How did the citizens of Limerick receive Ormond's application? With what foreign prince did the negotiation open after the departure of Ormond? What occurred after the surrender of Limerick? Who was made lord lieutenant by the parliament? What parliamentary proceedings took place with respect to Ireland? What change took place in the form of government in England? When the thirty Irish members were to be elected, how did the commissioners propose to act? Which of Cromwell's family made himself acceptable to the Irish people? What was debated in the Irish convention respecting the restoration of Charles? What was voted by the convention to the royal family.

BOOK THE NINTH.

CHAPTER I.

State of Ireland—King's declaration—Parliamentary proceedings—Proceedings relative to the bill of settlement.

A. D. ALTHOUGH the restoration of Charles II. was an event generally well received in Ireland, still 1660. it was to many a circumstance which excited no inconsiderable anxiety. Some were impatient to be restored to their old possessions, others to be confirmed in their new acquisitions; some were solicitous for pardon, others for reward. Hence arose various disorders, which, even before the king was proclaimed, called for the interference of the convention. Some outrages were represented in England by the new English settlers, as the commencement of another rebellion; and this so effectually that before the landing of the king, the act of indemnity was so prepared as to exclude all who had taken any part in the late rebellion in Ireland; by this means the whole body of the Roman catholics was excluded; and when it was provided that the act should not extend to restore the estates disposed of by any parliament or convention, it was with difficulty that an exception was obtained in favour of "the marquis of Ormond and other protestants."

When the king arrived in London, the houses united in expressing their apprehensions of the violences in Ireland, and the king issued a proclamation for prosecuting all Irish rebels; and commanding that no persons should be disturbed in their possessions, until legally evicted, or his majesty should, with the concurrence of parlia-

ment, make further provisions for the purpose. But this proclamation was not sufficient to remove all doubts, and the king was eagerly pressed to convene an Irish parliament, by which the interests of the soldiers and adventurers might be secured. It was necessary, however, to make many arrangements before this request could be granted. The convention had requested that all church property in the king's disposal might be granted to the clergy; and that all escheated lands now exempted from ecclesiastical dues, might be made liable to the same. To this request Charles made no objection; but all were not agreed, who were the ministers that should reap the benefits of it. Many divines of the presbyterian persuasion were in possession of some churches in and about Dublin, and governed themselves by the directory. On the king's landing they had petitioned to have their model of church government established; and a petition to the same effect was promoted in the army of Ireland.

Against these proceedings the clergy of the established church protested; and were ably supported by Ormond. He proposed, that instead of trusting to a new parliament composed of the adventurers and soldiers of Cromwell's army, the king should first fill up the ecclesiastical preferments with men of worth and learning of the established church. Charles accordingly filled up the four archbishoprics, and twelve episcopal sees, with the most eminent of the Irish clergy. Soon after this the king published his declaration for the settlement of Ireland.—By this declaration, the adventurers were confirmed in the lands possessed by them, on the 7th of May, 1659; and all their deficiencies were to be made good before the ensuing month of May. The soldiers were confirmed in the lands allotted for their pay, with an exemption of church lands, of estates procured fraudu-

lently, and of lands possessed by those who were excepted in the act of oblivion and indemnity. Officers who had served before the month of June, 1649, and had not yet received lands for their pay, were to be satisfied from estates, houses, and other securities; from these they were to receive at once twelve and six pence in the pound of their arrears, and an equal dividend of whatever the remainder of the security should produce. Protestants, whose estates had been given to adventurers or soldiers, were to be restored, unless they had been in the rebellion before the cessation, or had taken out decrees for lands in Connaught or Clare; the persons thus disturbed were to be compensated, without being accountable for the profits they had received. Roman catholics who had not engaged in the rebellion, although they had taken lands in Connaught, were to be restored to their estates, and the persons thus disturbed, to be compensated; those, however, whose estates lay within corporate towns were to receive equivalents in the neighbourhood, and not to be restored to their possessions, as it was determined that the corporations should be formed entirely of English inhabitants. Those who had served abroad under the king's ensigns, and accepted no lands in Connaught, were to be restored to their old possessions, but not till those who now enjoyed them should be otherwise satisfied. The declaration then settled the order in which restitution should be made, declared that a parliament should be convened, and that an act of general pardon and oblivion should pass, with an exception of notorious murderers; it closed with a provision, that nothing contained in it should confirm any property in any corporate town, either to adventurer or soldier or any others; but should remain in the king's hands to be restored to such corporations as he should choose. Instructions for its execution, were addressed to the

three new lords justices, sir Maurice Eustace, lord chancellor, lord Broghill lately created earl of Orrery, and sir Charles Coote, now earl of Montrath.

With whatever attention this declaration was drawn up, it was received by many with great dissatisfaction. The officers who had served before the year 1649, then called forty-nine men, considered that undue partiality was shewn to fanatics, and republicans; they had fought bravely when the war was most violent, their attachment to royalty had rendered them particularly obnoxious to the usurpers: their arrears were still unpaid; and the securities assigned for their payment, were deemed insufficient to discharge them. Such of the old inhabitants as pleaded their innocence or merits were provoked that the restitution of their estates should be deferred, until reprisals could be found for the present possessions. They objected to the commissioners, as men bound by interest and inclination to the soldiers and adventurers. The Roman catholics complained that the qualifications rendered necessary were so severe that all their party must be excluded from the benefit of restitution; particularly the making "residence in the quarters of the rebels" a proof of guilt, as many had no other place to reside in.—On the other hand it was urged, that at a distance of twenty years it was difficult to prove particular acts of rebellion, even against the most guilty: that their place of residence was now the only means of distinguishing between the guilty and the innocent; and that a scrupulous adherence to this qualification was necessary. In these dispositions the meeting of that parliament, which was to confirm the king's declaration by a law, was anxiously expected.

A. D. Parliament was convened; and, as the soldiers
1661. and adventurers still retained their interests in the
different corporations, most of the members of

the lower house were of their party. No Roman catholic and few only of the more violent fanatics were returned. Both houses began with a declaration requiring all persons to conform to the church government, and liturgy established by law. The covenant and oaths of association were censured. The commons then addressed the lords justices, requesting that the courts of law should be for some time shut up, to prevent the reversal of outlawries, and the ejectment of soldiers and adventurers until their titles should be settled by a statute. This measure was objected to in the lords as unconstitutional, but this house joined in the request, and it was granted. The commons next attempted to exclude Roman catholics from the house, by imposing oaths of qualification, and involving in their resolution an exclusion of the regicides and their sons; this attempt did not succeed.

But the great object of parliament was the heads of a bill for settling the kingdom conformably to the king's declaration. In the house of commons, where the interest of the adventurers and soldiers were predominant, it was contended that the declaration should be strictly observed. This was opposed by a strong party in the house of lords; at the head of which was the earl of Kildare, fortified by powerful connections, and the proxy of Ormond, now a duke. They contended that if the declaration should be strictly observed, that no reprisals could be found, either for the old protestants, or for the other classes. To enlarge the fund of reprisals, they insisted that several of the most pestilent fanatics should be, by name, excluded from all advantages of the declaration. They strongly reprobated some clandestine grants which had been made to cover property; strong objections were also made to some claims of the adventurers. Some weeks past in adjusting claims and

provisos. The bill was then transmitted to England, and each house nominated agents to attend the king and council there, and to solicit the immediate passing of the bill.

A. D. 1662. Both the adventurers and the Roman catholics now sent agents to London to watch over their separate interests. The former raised a considerable sum of money to be distributed among those who could support their claims. The Irish had no money—rejecting the patronage of Ormond, who advised an humble submission to the king's mercy, they relied on the justice of their cause, and demanded that they should be relieved from the rigour of those qualifications of innocency prescribed by the king's instructions, and selected as their advocate, colonel Richard Talbot, a gentleman who possessed some influence with the duke of York. The discussions before the council were protracted to a great length. The Irish inveighed against the adventurers and soldiers as regicides and rebels. The other party produced the original papers, proving that the supreme council gave their agents power to offer the kingdom to the pope, and if he refused it, to any other catholic prince; and sir Nicholas Plunket, one of the agents who had been knighted by the pope, acknowledged his signature. The king, when he issued his declaration, was of opinion that there were lands enough for all parties; he now found that he was mistaken, and that the interests of one or other of the parties must suffer, and determined that the loss should be sustained by the Irish. An order was made, that no farther petition or address should be received from the Roman catholics of Ireland; that the bill of settlement should be engrossed immediately. It was accordingly transmitted, and soon after passed by both houses.

EXERCISES.

How was the restoration of Charles received in Ireland? What gave rise to some commotions before the king was proclaimed? How were these represented in England? What was the consequence of these representations? What passed respecting Ireland on the king's arrival in London? What did the convention request? What petitions were sent? By whom? What did Ormond propose? What did the king's declaration confirm? How were the officers and soldiers to be paid? How were the royalists to be rewarded? Who were exempted from the act of oblivion? How were the corporate towns to be disposed of? Who were the new lords justices? Who were dissatisfied with the king's declaration? Why did the forty-nine men disapprove of it? Why did the old inhabitants? Why the Roman catholics? What was urged on the other hand? What did parliament require? What did they censure? For what did they address the lords Justices? Was this objected to? Why was it granted? How did they try to exclude Roman catholics? What was the object of parliament? Who opposed the declaration in the house of lords? How did they propose enlarging the fund? Who sent agents to London? What did the Roman catholics demand? Whom did they employ as their advocate? What did sir Nicholas Plunket acknowledge? what was the king's determination? What order was made?

CHAPTER II.

Duke of Ormond made lord lieutenant—Proceedings under the act of settlement—Explanatory bill passed—Exportation of fat cattle prohibited—Manufactures encouraged.

THE duke of Ormond had been appointed lord lieutenant of Ireland, and his arrival was impatiently expected. The Irish parliament presented him 30,000*l.*, his son, lord Ossory, was called by writ to the house of lords. He arrived attended by a magnificent train, and soon after gave the royal assent to the bill of settlement,

some others relative to the revenue, and one for abolishing the court of wards. The loss the revenue sustained by the suppression of this court was compensated by a tax on hearths. The execution of the act of settlement was entrusted to English commissioners, disengaged from all interests in Ireland. They sat in Dublin to receive claims and hear proofs of innocence; and notwithstanding the rigorous qualifications required, a greater number were pronounced innocent than their adversaries thought possible. In the first three months 168 were pronounced restorable; 19 only were condemned.—The successful parties were immediately to be restored, without any provision for compensating those who should be dispossessed; and as the fund for future reprisals was known to be small, the soldiers and adventurers were in the greatest consternation. They expected to be entirely dispossessed, and concluded that the commissioners had secret instructions to favour the other party. The more violent declared for maintaining their possessions by the sword: this spirit soon spread. There were many discontented with the present government, and a regular scheme of insurrection was formed. This design was imparted to the duke, as was also a plan for seizing the castle of Dublin, which was defeated.

The house of commons, taking advantage of a clause in the act of settlement which empowered the lord lieutenant and council to give farther directions, the commissioners now proposed such as would have involved the whole Irish party in inevitable condemnation—but the commons were rebuked by the lord lieutenant for their proceedings on this occasion.

A. D The discovery of the plot for seizing the castle of Dublin, had not crushed the hopes of the 1663. conspirators. Meetings were still held in the capital; correspondences opened with different parts of

the kingdom, particularly the northern province: arms and ammunition were provided, and a number of disbanded soldiers engaged. These proceedings were soon discovered by Ormond; on the eve of the day appointed for seizing the castle of Dublin, and publishing their declaration, five and twenty of the principal conspirators were taken, and a reward offered for those who escaped. A few were condemned; the rest were pardoned. Still the state of property in Ireland was unsettled, and the king refused to sanction any plan for a final accommodation formed by the present parliament, which he had some thoughts of dissolving. He directed the lord lieutenant and council to frame a new bill. Its purport was to explain some clauses in the declaration: to assign a better security for the forty-nine officers—to prevent the restitution of lands and houses in corporations—to increase the fund of reprisals, by taking a sixth part from the adventurers and soldiers, and by other expedients. This bill was transmitted to London, accompanied by agents from the different parties who were heard before the privy council. To assist in forming a decision on the various claims, Ormond was called to England. The earl of Ossory was appointed lord deputy.

A. D. On the duke's arrival in London, he found all
 1664. the parties inclined to abate somewhat of their demands; and the bill was at length framed and approved. In this, however, it was provided, that no Roman catholic who had not by the qualifications been adjudged innocent, should be entitled to claim any lands or settlements. As the court of claims had not heard more than one-fourth of the claimants, three thousand persons were thus cut off from all hopes of redress, with-

A. D. out even the appearance of a fair trial. The duke
 1665. now returned with the bill, which was finally passed in the Irish parliament. By this act, the

rights of the several interests in Ireland were fixed, and a final and invariable rule established for the settlement of this kingdom. Five commissioners were appointed for carrying this act into execution; they were to refer in all difficult cases to the lord lieutenant and council; and many years elapsed before all the applications were disposed of.

A. D. Another subject now engrossed the public attention. For some years a decrease had been experienced in the rents in England to the annual amount of 200,000*l*. Overlooking the obvious cause of this decrease, the English house of commons attributed it to the importation of fat cattle from Ireland. In the year 1663, a temporary act had been passed, for prohibiting the importation of fat cattle from Ireland after the 1st day of July in every year. The inconveniences of this prohibition were strongly represented to the king. But in proportion as he seemed convinced of the ill effects of this measure, were the commons determined on supporting it. In the parliament held at Oxford in 1665, a bill was brought in for a perpetual prohibition against importing all cattle from Ireland, dead or alive, great or small, fat or lean. Many arguments were urged against it in the commons, but in vain, it was passed by a small majority. In the lords it was opposed; and sir William Petty was heard against it before their committee. The report was delayed, and parliament was prorogued.

In the meantime, Ireland experienced the greatest distress, deprived of its usual trade with England, for which it had not the means of obtaining an equivalent by foreign commerce. The war with France and Holland added the danger of external enemies to the apprehensions entertained from the discontented at home. The soldiers were unpaid, and the expectation that

they would favour their designs encouraged the disaffected—the garrison mutinied at Carrickfergus, seized the town and castle, and acted in a manner highly alarming. The duke marched against them ; after some resistance the mutineers surrendered, and were punished—this petty disturbance, and the rumour that France meditated a descent upon Ireland, procured for the duke a supply from the English treasury of 15,000*l.* which enabled him to satisfy the army, and establish a body of militia in the provinces.

The fire in London called forth in Ireland a contribution for the relief of the sufferers; thirty thousand beeves were subscribed for this purpose ; a bounty which in England was represented as a practical contrivance to defeat the prohibition of Irish cattle—the experience of three years had shown the injurious effects of prohibiting the importation of cattle, and the rents of England had not encreased, while Ireland was unable to pay its subsidies ; but it was the object of a party in England to bring Ormond into disrepute by raising disturbances in Ireland ; the commons resumed the prohibition bill, declaring in the preamble, that the importation was a nuisance: in the lords the words ‘detriment’ and ‘mischief’ were inserted instead of ‘nuisance’ ; but the commons refused to pass the bill, except the word nuisance was suffered to stand : after several vehement and accrimonious debates : the king, afraid of losing his supplies, directed his ministers in the house of lords to consent to the obnoxious word, and the bill passed.

A. D. All commerce between the two nations was now
 1667. suspended ; no money could be found for discharging the subsidies necessary for securing both kingdoms against an invasion—Ormond found it necessary to accept part of these in provisions ; the king with the consent of his council, obtained with difficulty,

by an act of state, allowed a free trade from Ireland to all foreign countries, either in peace, or at war with his majesty; at the same time he permitted the Irish to retaliate on the Scots, who had, following the example of England, had excluded cattle, corn, and beef; the importation of linen and woollen manufactures, stockings, gloves, and other commodities from Scotland, was prohibited as highly injurious to the trade of Ireland: in addition to these methods of improving the country, Ormond applied himself most diligently to the promoting and encouraging industry and preventing the necessity of importing foreign productions; woollen manufactures were established at Clonmel and Carrick in the county of Tipperary, and skilful artisans were encouraged to settle in Ireland: an act of parliament was passed at Dublin to encourage the growth of hemp and flax; skilful persons were sent to the low countries, to learn the mode of growing and managing flax in all its stages, and to engage experienced artists—he employed sir William Temple to send to Ireland 500 families from Brabant, skilled in making linen; others were procured from Rochelle, and the Isle of Rhe, and from Jersey, and different parts of France. The duke next turned his attention to the university, the regulation of which was entrusted to bishop Taylor.

The machinations of Ormond's enemies became at length so undisguised that he found it necessary to go to England and expostulate with the king, while he committed the government of Ireland to his son, lord Ossory. The duke found that great pains had been taken to impress the king with an idea that a shameful embezzlement had prevailed in the revenue of Ireland; after a long enquiry, no ground of accusation against the lord lieutenant could be discovered; the king made the fairest professions, but the party which then governed

England, called the cabal, had determined on his removal, and he was acquainted by lord Arlington in due form, that his majesty had appointed 1669. lord Roberts, lord privy seal, lord lieutenant of Ireland. The duke resigned, convinced that this step was taken not so much from personal hostility to him, but as necessary to the furtherance of designs which he was not then able to discover.

The new viceroy was principally employed in scrutinizing the conduct of his predecessor, in which nothing culpable could be discovered. The strong contrast between the sullen temper and ungracious deportment of lord Roberts, and the affable and conciliating manners of Ormond, now rendered the former an object of general disgust in Ireland, and he was recalled. He was succeeded by John lord Berkley of Stratton.

EXERCISES.

Who was appointed lord lieutenant? What grant did parliament make to him? What was taxed? How many were found innocent by the English commissioners? What instructions did the commons request to have given to the commissioners? To what extent did the conspirators carry their designs? On what plan was the council ordered to frame a bill for setting the kingdom? What parties were injured by this bill? How was the act to be carried into execution? Why was the exportation of cattle from Ireland to England prohibited? What effect had this in Ireland? What occurred at Carrickfergus? What procured a supply for Ormond? What was subscribed by Ireland for the sufferers by the fire in London? What construction was put upon this donation? What means did Ormond take of compensating Ireland for the loss of its trade with England? What produced Ormond's removal? Who succeeded him? Why was lord Roberts removed? By whom was he succeeded?

CHAPTER III.

Account of the remonstrants, and anti remonstrants—Roman catholics petition the king—Ormond re-appointed—Titus Oates.

A. D. 1670. THE nomination of lord Berkeley, who was a creature of the duke of Buckingham's, to his new dignity, is generally considered as part of a plan then determined on by the ministers of Charles; their object was supposed to be the formation of a close alliance with France, and the establishment of arbitrary power in England. For this purpose it was thought necessary to pay more attention than had hitherto been done to the Roman catholics of Ireland, as professors of a religion more congenial to absolute monarchy than the sentiments of Englishmen were. The Roman catholics of Ireland were at this time divided into two parties, on a point of considerable moment to a protestant monarch. For nearly a century the measure of obedience due by Roman catholics to the civil power, was a question frequently discussed, and one which had given rise to great violence during the late commotions—on the restoration of Charles the 2nd, some of the Irish Roman catholic prelates and clergy commissioned Peter Walsh, a Franciscan friar, to present to the king a congratulatory address on the occasion, praying for the benefits of the peace made with Ormond in 1648. Walsh thinking it right to obviate the objection against the toleration of the Romish religion by a protestant government, drew up what was called, the remonstrance of the Roman catholic clergy of Ireland.

In this they acknowledged that the king was supreme lord and rightful sovereign of Ireland—that they were bound to obey him in all civil and temporal affairs, and

to pay him faithful loyalty and allegiance ; notwithstanding any sentence or declaration of the pope or see of Rome—they disclaimed the power of any foreign authority, to free them from the declaration—they declared their resolution to detect and oppose all conspiracies and traiterous attempts against the king.

This remonstrance was presented to Ormond, who objected, that it was not signed by the clergy, but offered on the authority of Walsh alone. One Roman catholic bishop, and twenty of the clergy immediately signed it ; a few declined subscribing it : circular letters were addressed to the Roman catholic prelates, inviting them to concur in an address, which was soon signed by an additional number of the clergy, and several lay lords and gentlemen. This remonstrance was censured by cardinal Barberini, and the internuncio of Brussels, who was charged by the Pope with the care of the ecclesiastical affairs of Ireland ; a party was soon formed against it ; counter addresses were proposed, and rejected ; some expressed a wish that the subject should be debated in a national synod. A declaration of fidelity to the king from such a body, at a time when he was at open war with France, and had reason to suspect the practices of the discontented at home, was very desirable. Ormond gave permission for the assembling of the clergy ; after some opposition the synod was held on the 11th of June, 1666 ; but the assembly broke up without any decision ; the members divided into two parties, those who supported the remonstrance, and those who opposed it.

On the arrival of lord Berkeley, provincial councils and diocesan synods were convened—in those the Pope, who named the bishops, and commanded the preferments of regulars, had a superiority ; the remonstrants were every where deprived, and Walsh and his associates were excommunicated—the anti-remonstrants had

lately received a powerful addition to their party in the person of Peter Talbot, who was nominated by the pope to the archbishopric of Dublin, and who had, through the patronage of Buckingham, acquired great favour at the English court.

The whole body of the Romish clergy was now on the point of uniting in the doctrine of the pope's unlimited authority. The remonstrants, who opposed this doctrine, requested permission to lay their case before the lord lieutenant; but he refused them an audience. Margetson, the primate, pleaded for them, but in vain. The intercessions of the duke of Ormond, in favour of the remonstrants, were complained of by Berkeley as officious. Orders were soon after issued for granting commissions of the peace to Roman catholics, and admitting them to inhabit and trade in corporations; they were also made aldermen of Dublin. Encouraged by these favourable symptoms in the court, a number of Roman catholic noblemen and gentlemen employed Talbot to lay their grievances before the king and parliament of England. He presented a petition to the king and council, which represented, that for want of a just representation of their cases, their estates had been possessed by others. It prayed that impartial persons might be appointed to hear and report their grievances. A committee was appointed to consider this petition: Ormond was on this committee, and urged the rejection of it altogether, on the grounds that although individual cases of injustice had occurred, the whole kingdom should not be thrown into confusion by attempting to redress these cases. This was refused, and all the papers were referred to sir Heneage Finch, the attorney general, who reported unfavourably for the petitioners. Another was then formed, from which Or-

mond was excluded. The report of this committee was erroneous, and a third commission was issued.

In the mean time, a general alarm prevailed in Ireland among the adventurers, soldiers, forty-nine officers, and Connaught purchasers. They presented their petitions, praying for the maintenance of the act of settlement. The English people shewed that they were not insensible to what was passing in Ireland. Ministers, dreading the approaching parliament, condemned the conduct of lord Berkeley, removed him from his government, and appointed the earl of Essex in his place. This did not satisfy the English parliament. They petitioned the king to maintain the acts of settlement and explanation, and to recal his late commission—to give orders that no Roman catholics should be admitted to the offices of justice of the peace, sheriffs or coroners, or to inhabit within corporate towns in Ireland. That all Roman catholic prelates, and others exercising ecclesiastical jurisdiction by the pope's authority, should be ordered to depart from Ireland. The king, in his answer, declared his resolution of maintaining the act of settlement; and the government of Essex shewed the influence of the English parliament by the attention which was paid to its representations in other points.

The conduct of Essex was marked by caution and integrity little suited to the purposes of his employers. His removal was therefore determined on, for a more compliant successor, when the duke of Ormond was most unexpectedly appointed to succeed him. For many years the greatest coldness had prevailed between the king and Ormond, who was particularly obnoxious to Charles's ministers. An attempt had been made to assassinate him by a colonel Blood, who afterwards attempted to rob the tower of the regalia. On this occasion,

lord Ossory told the duke of Buckingham in the king's presence, that he believed him to be at the bottom of the attempt on his father's life ; and gave him notice, that if his father's death should be caused by any violent means, he should consider the duke as the assassin, and would shoot him, though he stood behind the king. Among many conjectures at the cause of this unexpected appointment, the most propable is, that it was done at the instance of the duke of York, to prevent his rival, the duke of Monmouth, natural son of the king, from being entrusted with a post, which would have thrown so much power into the hands of a man who was aspiring to the throne.

A. D. 1677. On Ormond's return to the government of Ireland, he directed his attention to the improvement of the army. The want of supplies, and the existence of several abuses and grievances, rendered it necessary to assemble a parliament, which Ormond determined to convene. But all his projects were interrupted, by intelligence received from England, of the popish plot which had been brought forward by Titus Oates, and had filled the kingdom with alarm. This intelligence was accompanied with assurances that it extended to Ireland ; that Peter Tolbot was engaged in it ; and that persons were hired to assassinate the lord lieutenant. To have doubted in the existence of a plot, would have been looked on as traiterous. A warrant was signed for his apprehension ; he was found in his brother's house so ill of an excruciating disease under which he laboured, that he could not be removed ; and no papers were found except of a private nature. Orders were issued for all officers and soldiers to repair to their respective garrisons ; for all Roman catholic ecclesiastics to quit the kingdom, and all laymen of that persuasion to surrender their arms.

In England informations multiplied ; and now Ormond received directions to seize Richard Talbot, lord Mountgarret and his son, and a colonel Peppard Talbot was examined and discharged by order of the English privy council. Lord Mountgarret, now eighty years of age, was bed-ridden, and in a state of dotage ; and no colonel Peppard could be discovered or was ever heard of. These instances were sufficient to stamp the character of the informers : but credulity was still blind. Information was received that a particular ship was arrived at Waterford, full of arms and ammunition ; on searching the vessel she was found to be laden with salt. Informers were procured, several persons of respectability were accused and taken to London to be tried, and all acquitted except Oliver Plunket, a Roman catholic prelate who on a second trial, was found guilty of a plot which he solemnly denied at his death ; and which no man who knew Ireland would have believed if he had confessed it.

Ormond proceeded to put into execution such measures as he thought necessary for ensuring the public tranquillity. Some of these were of the severest kind, but not sufficiently rigorous to satisfy the alarmists. The issue proved, however, that the measures of Ormond were effective, and Ireland remained undisturbed. The enemies of the duke now found all their endeavours to drive him from his station vain, and he stood their attacks unmoved. The return of tranquillity at length allowed him to commit the sword of state to a deputy ; leaving the kingdom in charge of the earl of Arran, he went on the king's summons to England.

A. D. After a residence of two years, Ormond re-
1684. turned to the government of Ireland. He had scarcely, however, resumed the reins when he found that designs were contemplated to which he

could not join. Charles had subdued the party in England, which had attempted to circumscribe him within the limits of the constitution, and to exclude his brother from the succession to the crown. Indolently enjoying his superiority, he committed to the duke of York the management of public affairs. To maintain the superiority which he had acquired, the duke represented to his brother the expediency of providing an army implicitly devoted to his wishes. For this purpose, he advised the new modelling of the Irish army, by removing from it those, whose republican principles were irreconcilable to a despotic government: and in their room to substitute Irish Roman catholics, men more devoted to the crown and its presumptive heir, whose religious sentiments were in unison with their own.

To carry this project into execution, it was necessary to remove Ormond: he was to be succeeded by the earl of Rochester, under restrictions which made him at first hesitate to accept the office. The king seemed again disposed to change his measures and advisers, and every thing respecting Ireland was suspended, when the A. D. death of Charles II., and the immediate recall of Ormond produced a complete revolution in the 1685. politics of the kingdom.

In this reign 4 sessions were held, in which 54 laws were passed.

EXERCISES.

What was supposed to be the purpose of the English ministry in appointing lord Berkeley lord lieutenant of Ireland? What was in dispute among the Roman catholics? What was their declaration to the king conveyed by Wash? Who signed it? Why did Ormond permit the Synod to assemble? Who was excommunicated? What

favours were granted to the Roman catholics? What petition did they present? Who opposed their claims? What counter petitions were sent? What was the king's answer? Who was appointed to succeed Essex? With what did lord Ossory charge the duke of Buckingham? Why did the duke of York favour Ormond? What prevented Ormond from convening a parliament? What alarm was spread in Ireland? What orders were issued? Who was seized? Who was executed for this pretended plot? Whom did Ormond leave deputy in Ireland? What circumstances rendered the government of Ormond unacceptable to the king? Who was his intended successor? What suspended the nomination of Rochester? What laws were enacted in this reign?

CHAPTER. IV.

Ormond removed—Clarendon lord lieutenant—Revolution in England—Transactions at Derry.

A. D. 1685. ORMOND had been ordered to resign the sword of state to two lords justices, Boyle, primate and chancellor, and Forbes earl of Granard. But the violent clamours of the two parties, one impatient to be elevated, the other afraid of being depressed, so distracted these governors, that Granard soon expressed a wish that he might be dismissed. The king thought his services so necessary, that in a letter written with his own hand, he assured him that nothing should be done in Ireland prejudicial to the protestant interest. Soon after, intelligence was received of the attempts of Monmouth and Argyle to dethrone James. On this occasion the Irish army marched with alacrity to Ulster, to be embarked for Scotland against the adherents of Argyle, if his attempts should render it necessary. This, however, was not the case; both at-

tempts failed, and ended in the execution of those noblemen.

The justices were now informed that the contagion of Monmouth's rebellion was widely diffused, and that it was necessary to the safety of the kingdom, that the militia of Ireland should be disarmed. This body consisted entirely of protestants. The justices were apprehensive that the proclamation for disarming them might produce some commotion : they, therefore, employed the primate to prevail on the citizens of Dublin to resign their arms. Their example was followed by the rest of the kingdom, and the orders of government were every where obeyed.

The lords justices were soon removed to make way for the earl of Clarendon, brother-in-law to the king, who was made lord lieutenant of Ireland. In his public instructions, his majesty intimated a desire of introducing Roman catholics into corporations, judicial offices and the magistracy ; ordering him, at the same time, not to be inattentive to the terrors and suspicions of the protestants, and that he had no intention of altering the act of settlement. For some years the kingdom had been infested by a band of robbers, called tories, who concealed themselves in bogs and mountains, from whence they harrassed and plundered the industrious and inoffensive inhabitants. Encouraged by the disarming of the militia, they had lately extended their depredations, which were arrived at such a height, that the new viceroy found it necessary to restore to some of the protestants their arms. A number of protestants were now harrassed by prosecutions for expressions spoken against the king when duke of York.

A petition was presented, praying the reversal of all outlawries occasioned by the rebellion of 1641—a measure which would have been sufficiently obnoxious to all who had acquired property since, of what religion they

might be. The seals were taken from the primate: sir Charles Porter was made chancellor—three protestant judges were removed, without any reason assigned, and two Irish Roman catholics, Nugent and Daly, and Ingolsby, an Englishman, were raised to the bench; the latter declined this preferment. Lord Clarendon represented, that to admit Roman catholics to places of trust without taking the oath of supremacy, was contrary to the law; his representations, however, were not attended to. The new judges, and some Roman catholic lords were made privy counsellors, which was an unusual honour for men of their rank. A vacancy in the see of Cashel was left unfilled, and reports were spread that the king would consult the pope before he disposed of this mitre. Orders were issued by the king's command, that the Roman catholic clergy should be allowed to exercise their functions; and that their prelates should appear in the habit of their order. The earl of Granard was appointed president of the council, but he declared his intention of retiring from public business, and declined the honour; the protestant clergy were prohibited from discussing controversial points.

From these circumstances, the protestants concluded that the Roman catholic religion would soon be established, and that a general confusion of property would follow: several sold their property and left the country. While these alarms prevailed, Talbot, now earl of Tyrconnel, arrived with a commission to command and regulate the army, independent of the lord lieutenant, with instructions for the admission of Roman catholics into corporations, and the offices of sheriffs and justices of the peace. This noblemen treated the lord lieutenant with the greatest contempt, and exceeding the king's orders for the admission of Roman catholic officers, would admit none else. Clarendon remonstrated both to

the king and Sunderland against the conduct of Tyrconnel; and to quiet the fears and suspicions of the protestants, he recommended a commission of grace for confirming titles, and a general pardon for offensive words spoken against the king when duke of York. Sunderland returned no answer to his representations; his majesty refused to repeat his former assurances of maintaining the acts of settlement by proclamation.

In the mean time, Clarendon was accused of misconduct in his administration; his defence was clear and satisfactory; still it was determined to remove him. The choice of a successor was an object of deliberation in the cabinet: at length Tyrconnel was selected for this office, with the inferior title of lord deputy. Clarendon resigned the reins to him, and embarked at Dublin, accompanied by several hundred protestant families of that city, who were quitting the kingdom. Sir Charles Porter had not proved as complying as was expected, and was removed. Nagle, a Roman catholic lawyer was substituted for sir William Domville, the attorney general: Nugent and Rice were made chief judges, and their places filled by Roman catholic lawyers. Nearly
 A. D. the whole Irish army was at this time; formed of
 1687. Roman catholics: of the protestant officers, who were dismissed, a number went to Holland and were employed by the prince of Orange, son-in-law to James. Several corporations were dissolved, others were induced by threats and promises to surrender their charters. They were re-modelled on such a plan as would in future parliaments have thrown the elections into the power of the Roman catholics. Attempts were made to force some men of infamous character into the university; these failed, but the annual pension from the exchequer, then the principal part of its support, was withdrawn.

Complaints were now made in every part of the kingdom, of the conduct of the sheriffs, the courts of justice, and the military officers; the English ministers were alarmed at the great decrease in the revenue; they imputed it to the misconduct of Tyrconnel, and inveighed against his violence; the king was pressed to remove him, but the deputy obtained leave to wait on the king, and laid such a statement concerning his administration before him, that he was continued in office.

A. D. While these transactions were passing in Ireland, the course which James pursued in England had 1688. alienated the minds of his subjects, who now invited William prince of Orange to rescue them from approaching destruction, and offering to him the British throne.—William collected an army, landed at Torbay, and advanced to London without opposition. The Roman catholics of Ireland at first despised the attempt of William; but the progress of the revolution in England soon opened their eyes, and those of their governor, to this impending danger; commissions were issued for levying troops, and in all quarters of the kingdom, numbers took up arms to support the fortunes of James.

Anonymous letters extensively circulated, now spread among the protestants, the conviction, that a general massacre was intended—those letters gave circumstantial accounts of this design, and mentioned sunday, the 9th of December, as the day fixed on for their extermination: the capital became a scene of uproar and confusion; numbers got to the coast and embarked for England; others sought shelter in walled towns, and protestant settlements. In the northern counties, where their numbers gave them confidence, they collected such arms as still remained among them, and prepared for defence.

On the first alarm of the prince of Orange's invasion, Tyrconnel had withdrawn the garrison of Derry to

Dublin: soon sensible of his mistake in leaving such a post in the hands of the townsmen, he detached a regiment of 1200 men, to take possession of this city—on the approach of this body, considerable doubt existed in the town as to what course it was advisable to adopt: some proposed to shut the gates against Tyrconnel's troops, others to submit quietly—at length, when the advanced guard of the troops appeared within three-hundred yards of the ferry-gate, nine young men drew their swords, and made themselves masters of the keys of the city, raised the draw-bridge, and locked the ferry-gate: being quickly joined by others, the remaining gates were also secured. A governor was now chosen; and an agent dispatched to solicit succours from the prince of Orange. At the same time the magistrates and some of the citizens addressed themselves to Tyrconnel, through the mediation of lord Mountjoy: they represented their inability to restrain the populace, terrified by the rumours of a massacre, and declared their resolution of confining themselves entirely to self defence, without violating their allegiance.

Lord Mountjoy was detached by Tyrconnel with six companies to recover Derry; the citizens were willing to admit this nobleman as he was a protestant, but they entertained strong suspicions of his soldiers: after several conferences, in which the citizens disclaimed all seditious views, but expressed a firm resolution of defending themselves, Mountjoy was admitted on conditions: it was stipulated, that, a free pardon should be granted in fifteen days: that in the interval two companies only should be quartered in the city; that, the forces afterwards admitted should be formed of at least one half protestants; that, until the pardon was received, the citizens should keep the guards; and that all who wished might remove from the city—money was now

subscribed, ammunition purchased in Scotland, and their agent who had been sent to the prince, earnestly solicited to procure supplies.

EXERCISES.

Why did the earl of Granard desire to be dismissed? What assurances did the king give? For what was the Irish army ordered to march to Ulster? Why was it deemed necessary to disarm the militia? Who was employed to prevail on them to obey? Who was appointed lord lieutenant of Ireland? What were his public instructions? For what cause were arms restored to some of the protestants? What petition was presented? Who were removed, and who substituted in their place? What did lord Clarendon represent? What honours were bestowed on Roman catholics? Under what restraint were the protestant clergy? With what commission did Talbot arrive? What was his conduct? To whom did Clarendon remonstrate and what did he recommend? Who succeeded him, and who accompanied him to England? Where did the protestant officers of the Irish army go on being dismissed? How were corporations treated? How was the university treated? What complaints were made? To what was the decrease in the revenue imputed? How did the Roman catholics act on the attempt of the prince of Orange? What alarm was spread amongst the protestants? How did the citizens of Derry act? What representation was made by the magistrates of Derry? On what conditions did the citizens of Derry admit lord Mountjoy? What were their proceedings?

CHAPTER V.

*Associations formed.—Hamilton's mission to Tyrconnel—
Military operations, and arrival of James.—Siege of
Derry.*

THE example of Derry was followed by other northern towns; in different counties parties arose under the direction of their respective leaders; county councils were

nominated, and a general council to meet at Hillsborough which had the power of appointing officers, and directing operations—in the mean time the prince of Orange who had now been invested in England with that sovereignty which James had by his flight to France abandoned, was too much occupied to attend personally to the affairs of Ireland. General Richard Hamilton, who had been sent into England with reinforcements, on the first alarm of an invasion, remained in England as a prisoner. It was represented to king William that he had great influence with Tyrconnel, and he was therefore employed by that monarch to pass into Ireland, and persuade the chief governor to resign. Hamilton undertook this mission with alacrity, and expressed great confidence of his being able to succeed.

On Hamilton's arrival, he advised Tyrconnel to remain stedfast to James, and assured him that affairs in England began to wear an aspect favourable to the house of Stuart—the deputy adopted this advice, and employed Hamilton; at the same time he found it necessary to dissemble, and assured the protestant lords, that he was ready to submit to William; he prevailed on Mountjoy to accompany chief baron Rice to James, to represent to him the necessity of yielding to the times, instead of exasperating his English subjects by an attempt, which must prove fruitless, to conquer England with Irish forces—on their arrival in France, Mountjoy was thrown into the Bastile, while Rice solicited succours for his master's service; Tyrconnel was confirmed in his resolution of opposing William, by advices from James, that he would soon appear in Ireland at the head of a powerful force.

The deputy, however, had too long neglected his opponents; associations had been formed in Munster and Connaught. On assurances of assistance from En-

gland, William and Mary had been proclaimed in the north-eastern towns ; Tyrconnel published a proclamation signed by lord Granard, and some other protestant lords, ordering them to lay down their arms, and dissolve their assemblies. General Hamilton marched against them with a formidable force : they retired to Dromore, from whence the enemy overtaking them, they fled, and were pursued with great slaughter : they gained, but immediately abandoned Hillsborough, and continued their flight. Several abandoned the kingdom, others accepted protections from Hamilton's army ; a body of 4000 occupied Colerain, with the view of disputing the passage of the Bann : this post was also abandoned, and after a successful skirmish the enemy crossed the river in boats—the northerns hastened to Derry as their last refuge.

After the departure of Mountjoy, the command of Derry devolved on Lundy, his second in command ; he was suspected of not being sincere in his professions of regard to William ; many of the inhabitants prepared to abandon the town, when Cairnes their agent arrived from London, with assurances from William, that preparations were made for the immediate relief of Ireland. The citizens then determined on defending themselves, and Lundy declared his resolution of marching against the enemy.

A. D. James, who had been soliciting assistance from the court of France, sailed from Brest, on the 1688. 7th of March with fourteen ships of war, six frigates and three fire ships, having on board 1200 of his native troops in the pay of France, and 100 French officers under the command of Mareschal Rosen, a German officer. He landed at Kinsale on the 12th and arrived at Dublin on the 24th with all the pomp of royalty. Addresses were presented from all classes; to each

he returned a gracious answer ; he removed from the privy council all the protestant members, and supplied their places with Roman catholics—he issued five proclamations ; by the first he commanded all protestants who had lately abandoned the kingdom, to return under the severest penalties, and that his subjects of every persuasion should unite against the prince of Orange—the object of the second was to suppress robberies, ordering all Roman catholics not of his army to lay up their arms in their several abodes ; a third invited the country to bring provisions to his troops ; by the fourth he raised the value of money ; and by the last a parliament was summoned to meet at Dublin on the 7th of May.

The reducing of Derry was the next object : several plans were proposed for this purpose ; it was at length agreed to press it by a slow siege, and to encourage the besiegers, and confound the besieged, James determined to lead his troops in person to the walls ; among those who were determined to resist the arms of James, the most conspicuous was an English clergyman of the name of Walker ; he raised a regiment which he commanded, and flew rapidly from post to post, conferring with the different leaders, and animating the people to resist their late monarch : he now hastened to Derry, informed Lundy of the enemy's approach, and intreated him to give them battle before all their forces were collected. Lundy accordingly stationed his troops to dispute the passage of the Frinnwater : but in the hour of danger he abandoned his post, retired to Derry, and shut the gates against many who sought refuge there.

In the mean time two English regiments arrived in Lough Foyle, the colonels of which had orders to put themselves under the command of Lundy ; this officer ordered the colonels and some of their officers to land ;

with these, and some of the officers of the garrison, a council of war was formed, in which it was resolved that the place was not tenable; that the principal officers should withdraw and leave the inhabitants to make terms with the enemy. The town-council, on learning these resolutions, determined to offer terms of capitulation to James, who was approaching. But when the people discovered these proceedings, they opposed them with the greatest vehemence, cried aloud for vengeance on their betrayers, slew one officer as he attempted to escape, and wounded another.

During the confusions that ensued, Murray, a popular officer, arrived with a reinforcement, and though commanded by Lundy to retire, entered the town and was received with acclamation. He inveighed against the idea of surrendering, and while he expostulated with Lundy, the people rushed to the walls, pointed the cannon, and fired on James and his troops, who advanced to take possession of the city. Some of the citizens sent a deputation to apologize for this violence, but the majority declared for defence. Lundy resigned: the people appointed Walker and major Baker their governors. By these officers they were formed into eight regiments, amounting to 7020 men exclusive of 341 officers. Those who chose, were suffered to depart, and the besieged took their stations. The town was assaulted eleven days without success; at length James, impatient of disappointment, returned to Dublin.

The garrison continued to defeat all the attempts of the besiegers, and to harrass them with successful sallies: but they were themselves threatened with all the miseries of famine and disease. In the midst of their distress, a large fleet appeared in Lough Foyle, containing troops, arms, ammunition, and provisions; but they had soon the mortification of seeing Kirk, who had

the command, set sail and disappear without making any effort to relieve them. Although numbers of the garrison were scarcely able to support their arms, they threatened to punish with death any one who should propose to surrender. Rosen, who commanded the besieging army, declared, that if the town did not surrender before the 1st of July, the property of all the protestants in the neighbourhood should be given up to plunder, and themselves driven under the walls of Derry, there to remain until it should surrender. The appointed day came, but the garrison remained steadfast to their first determination. The next morning a confused multitude was seen driven by soldiers towards the town; they were at first mistaken for enemies, and fired on by the besieged, but no lives were lost. This multitude consisted of some thousands of protestants of all ages and conditions; many of them besought the garrison not to mind their sufferings, but to defend their lives to the last. The besieged now erected a gallows in view of the enemy, and threatened that all their prisoners should be instantly executed, unless their friends were allowed to depart: but Rosen continued inflexible. James, however, having heard of these transactions, ordered the protestants to be released. The survivors of this confinement, which continued three days, were then allowed to depart: the besiegers had, in the interim taken some of their ablest men into the city, and passed out, undiscovered in the crowd, 500 useless hands.

In the mean time, the garrison was reduced to the necessity of supporting nature on the most disgusting food, and so exhausted were even those miserable resources, that subsistence for only two days remained; animated, however, by the exhortations of Walker, they were still determined to persevere. At length, on the

30th of July, Kirk, who had abandoned them from the 13th, determined to make a deperate effort to relieve them. Two ships laden with provisions, conveyed by the Dartmouth frigate, advanced in view of both the besiegers and the besieged. The former from their batteries, erected on each side of the Lough, fired furiously on the ships, which returned their fire with equal spirit. The foremost of the victuallers struck forcibly against a boom placed across the channel, and broke it: but, rebounding with violence, she grounded. The enemy shouted exultingly and prepared to board her, while the garrison remained in despair on the walls; the vessel now fired her guns, was extricated by the shock, and floated. She passed the boom, and was followed by the other vessels; and the town being thus relieved, the enemy with a loss of 8000 men, in a siege of one hundred and five days, retired to Strabane. Of the garrison, no more than 3400 remained; of these more than 1000 were unfit for service. As soon as they had tasted food, they marched out in quest of the enemy, and lost some men by advancing too boldly on their rear guard.

EXERCISES.

What effect was produced by the example of Derry? What means did the prince of Orange try for getting the government of Ireland into his hands? How did Hamilton execute the commission entrusted to him? What professions did Tyrconnel make to the protestant lords? On what mission did he send Mountjoy? What encouraged Tyrconnel to adhere to James? Where were William and Mary proclaimed? What was the issue of Hamilton's operations against the protestants? Who succeeded to Mountjoy in the command of Derry? What opinion was entertained of him? By what force was James accompanied to Ireland? What proclamations did he issue? How was it determined to act against Derry? Who was particularly distinguished by his opposition to James? How did Lundy behave? What occurred when the English regiments ar-

rived? Who arrived with reinforcements? Who were chosen governors? How many men did the garrison consist of? How long did James continue at the siege? How did Kirk behave? What means did Rosen take to induce the garrison to surrender? How did the garrison threaten to retaliate? To what state was the garrison reduced? How were they encouraged to persevere? How were they relieved? What loss did the besiegers sustain? What loss did the garrison sustain?

CHAPTER VI.

Military operations—Parliamentary proceedings—Arrival of Schomberg—His operations—King William arrives and takes the command.

DURING the siege of Derry, James's army had been considerably annoyed by the Enniskillen men, as those protestants were called who had assembled about Enniskillen, under the command of Gusatvus Hamilton. Lord Galmoy marched to reduce them, and invested Cromcastle one of their garrisons; finding it impracticable to bring up his cannon, he had two pieces of painted tin mounted on carriages and drawn towards the castle by a number of horses—he then threatened to batter the castle; the garrison returned a defiance, and being reinforced from Enniskillen, made a sally, drove the enemy from their trenches and seized the counterfeit cannon. On the arrival of Kirk, the numbers who had associated, were furnished with arms and ammunition, and were now become so formidable, that three armies were dispatched to attack them; two of these were routed with considerable slaughter. The other, under the command of the duke of Berwick, after gaining some trifling advantage, retired.

A. D. James had now assembled a parliament in Dublin. A bill was immediately passed, recognizing the king's title, and expressing an abhorrence of the prince of Orange and his usurpation. James published a declaration, in which he expressed his determination to protect the properties, privileges, and religion of his protestant subjects. But whatever were his inclinations, he allowed himself to be governed by others. The French ambassador, d'Avaux, took the lead in his council; all commissions in his army were given to Frenchmen. In parliament, a bill was passed for repealing the acts of settlement. Nothing could have been more injurious to the cause of James than this proceeding, of which he disapproved entirely. Several acts were passed against the adherents of the prince of Orange. James opposed a bill for the repeal of Poyning's law, and would not consent to the establishment of inns of court in Ireland for the education of lawyers.

Unable to procure a sufficient supply of money, he issued a proclamation, by virtue of his prerogative, imposing on all chattles a tax of 12000*l.* a month, being the amount of a subsidy granted by parliament to be levied on lands. Some of his council expostulated against this arbitrary proceeding, but without effect. "If I cannot do this, said he, I can do nothing." He had recourse to another expedient to relieve his distresses. Seizing the tools of a man who enjoyed by patent the right of a copper coinage in Ireland, he established a mint in Dublin and Limerick: here old cannon, broken bells, and household utensils were collected: from every pound weight of these materials, valued at four pence, pieces were coined of the nominal value of five pounds, and forced into circulation in the most unjust manner, and to the great injury of the public.

A little after the arrival of James, a mandamus was

presented to the governors of the university, to admit one Green to a senior fellowship; the governors refused obedience to the mandamus. In a few days, the fellows and scholars were forcibly ejected by James's soldiers; public and private property was seized, the chapel was converted into a magazine, and the chambers into prisons. At the intercession of the bishop of Meath, the members obtained their personal liberty, on condition that three should not meet together on pain of death. Moor, a Roman catholic clergyman, was nominated provost, and he with the assistance of Macarthy, another of his own order, preserved the library, books and manuscripts from the ravages of the army. In many cases the protestants were deprived of their churches by the Roman catholics. They remonstrated to James against these proceedings; he acknowledged his promise of protection, and published a proclamation against the outrages of which they complained. He had, however, the mortification to find that his clergy would pay him no obedience, and that his proclamation was disregarded.

It was at length determined by William to support his adherents in Ireland, with more effect than he had hitherto done. On the 13th of August, the duke of Schomberg arrived in the bay of Carrickfergus with 10,000 men and some artillery; he landed near Bangor in the county of Down. The garrisons of Belfast and Antrim retired at his approach; some to Lisburn, the greater part to Carrickfergus; to the latter Schomberg laid siege. In a few days the garrison surrendered, being allowed to march to their next post with their arms and baggage. On their march they were attacked by the Ulster Scots, and were with difficulty preserved by the interposition of the general. Schomberg, now reinforced from England, advanced to Lisburn, Hills-

borough, Dromore, and Loughbrickland. The troops of James retired, and in their retreat burned Newry and Carlingford. Schomberg threatened to give no quarters if these outrages were repeated. They abandoned Dundalk without injuring the town, towards which Schomberg advanced.

The officers of James's army were deliberating whether they should not abandon their position at Drogheda, and retire to Dublin, when Tyrconnel arrived, and diverted them from such a resolution; he assured them of a powerful reinforcement. Troops arrived from the southern provinces, and they determined on maintaining their present position. The difficulty of the country through which Schomberg had hitherto marched, had prevented the enemy's cavalry from annoying him. The country now before him was plain and open, where the superior numbers of James's army could surround his, and cut off his communication with the fleet and his northern friends; he therefore determined not to advance. Mareschal Rosen drew his forces towards Dundalk, while the duke fortified his camp, to prevent the enemy from forcing him to an action. An attempt was made to secure a pass at Newry, so as to fall on his rear, but it did not succeed. At length the whole army, with James at its head, was drawn out and advanced towards Schomberg's camp; an engagement appeared inevitable, when James drew off his forces to Ardee. His own army attributed this movement to a desire of sparing his English subjects. In Schomberg's army, it was considered that the enemy's motions were intended to countenance a conspiracy formed by some French Roman catholics to betray the camp. This design was discovered next day; the principals were executed, the rest were disarmed, and sent to Holland.

The troops of Schomberg, confined to their camp in a low situation, became afflicted with disease which carried off great numbers. The enemy, encamped on higher ground, retained their health for a longer time, though in the end they suffered severely. The duke at length retired to winter quarters to the northern towns, whither his men carried the inextinguished infection of their camp.

The issue of Schomberg's expedition, was a source of great discontent among the people of England, where expectations had been formed of the most brilliant successes. His distresses had been concealed from them, and they were mortified to hear of his entrenching himself against the enemy—parliament remonstrated with violence against miscarriages in the army, the fleet, and in Ireland. William, therefore, determined to undertake the conduct of the war in person. Cloaths, arms, ammunition, and provisions were dispatched from England. Seven thousand Danes landed at Belfast, under the command of the prince of Wirtemberg. Schomberg began to furnish his frontier garrisons with stores. James also prepared for the campaign; before the opening of which he had the mortification to see his only frigate captured in the bay of Dublin by sir Cloudesly Shovel, and to lose the fort of Charlemont. In the mean time, several regiments of English, Dutch, and A. D. Brandenburgishers, arrived; and on the 14th day of June king William landed at Carrickfergus, 1690. attended by prince George of Denmark, the young duke of Ormond, and several other persons of distinction.

The first act of his civil authority was the issuing his warrant for the payment of an annual pension of 1200*l.* to the teachers of the dissenting congregations of the northern province: his forces were immediately ordered

to take the field; they assembled at Lough-brickland, where they were joined by William and his train; from thence he removed southward with an army of 36000 men well appointed: the fleet coasted slowly in view to supply them with necessaries. James, on receiving the intelligence of William's landing, committed the guard of Dublin to a body of militia, and marched with 6000 French infantry, to join the main body of his army which lay near Drogheda, on the banks of the river Boyne; this army was about 33000 strong. His council of officers advised him not to hazard an engagement against superior numbers; they represented to him that by a defensive war the resources of the enemy must be exhausted, and as the French monarch had promised to send a fleet to destroy William's transports, his retreat would be cut off. James, however, contended for the necessity of acting vigorously, and expressed his satisfaction, that he had at last an opportunity of having one fair battle for the crown; at the same time he dispatched sir Patrick Trant to Waterford, to prepare a ship to convey him to France, in case of a defeat.

EXERCISES.

By whom were James's troops annoyed during the siege of Derry? What stratagem did lord Galmoy make use of? What was the fate of the three armies sent against the Enniskillen men? What was the first act passed by parliament? What declaration did James publish? Who took the lead in his council? What acts were repealed? What acts did James oppose? What means did he use for raising money? What occurred with respect to the university? What with respect to churches? What forces did William send to support his adherents in Ireland? To what town did Schomberg lay siege? What towns did James's army burn? Who prevented the officers of James's army from abandoning Drogheda? Why did Schomberg halt and fortify his camp? What effect did the situation of Schomberg's camp produce on his men? How did the people of England receive the intelligence of his proceedings? How did William determine to conduct the war? Where did he land? What was his first act of civil authority? What was the strength of his army? What advice did James's officers give him, and how did he determine to act?

CHAPTER VII.

*Advance of William's army—Dispositions of the armies—
Battle of the Boyne—Flight of James.*

ON the 30th June William's army moved towards the Boyne in three columns, himself marching at the head of his advanced guard, which soon appeared within a few miles of Drogheda. Here, from the summit of a hill, he took a view of the enemy; on their right was Drogheda filled with their troops; eastward of the town, on the further banks of the river, their camp extended in two lines, with a morass on the left, difficult to be passed; in their front were the fords of the Boyne, deep and dangerous, with rugged banks, defended by some breastworks; in their rear at some distance, lay the church and village of Donore; three miles farther was the pass of Duleek, on which they depended for a retreat. William's army was now marching into camp, when anxious to gain a nearer, and more distinct view of the enemy, he advanced with some officers within musket-shot of a ford, opposite to a village called Old-bridge, here he conferred for some time on the methods of passing, and planting his batteries; riding on still westward, he alighted, and sat down to refresh himself on a rising ground. Neither the motions of William, nor of his army were unnoticed in the army of James; Berwick, Tyrconnel, Sarsfield, and some other generals, rode slowly along the opposite banks, and discovered the present situation of the king: a party of about forty horse immediately appeared in a field, opposite to the place on which he sat; in their centre they concealed two field-pieces, which they planted unnoticed, under cover of a hedge, and retired. William mounted his

horse ; at that moment the first discharge killed a man and two horses at a little distance from the king ; another ball, which instantly followed, grazed on the banks of the river, whence it rose, and slanting on his right shoulder, wounded him ; the royal attendants crowded round in confusion.

In the enemy's camp it was supposed he was killed, the news was conveyed to Dublin, and thence to Paris, which was illuminated, and the guns of the Bastile fired on the occasion. In the evening William assembled his principal officers, to whom he declared his resolution of passing the river in front of the enemy : duke Schomberg endeavoured to dissuade him from this hazardous enterprise, and when he could not prevail, insisted that part of the army should be immediately detached to secure the bridge of Slane, about three miles westward of their camp, to cut them off from Duleek, the pass through which they might retreat ; this counsel being also treated with indifference, the duke retired. James discovered the same inattention as William did to this important pass : in his council of war, Hamilton recommended that eight regiments might be sent immediately to secure the bridge ; James proposed to employ fifty dragoons in this service ; the general in astonishment bowed, and was silent.

At midnight William rode through his camp with torches, inspected every post, and issued his final orders. Early on the succeeding morning, count Schomberg, son of the duke, with his cavalry, and Douglas with his infantry, which compassed the right wing, marched towards Slane with greater alacrity than the troops sent from the other side to oppose them ; they crossed the river without any opposition, except from a regiment of dragoons stationed at the ford, then advancing, they found their antagonists drawn up in two

lines; in forming they mixed their horse and foot, squadron with battalion, until on the arrival of more infantry, they changed their position, drawing their horse to the right, by which they considerably outflanked the enemy; but they had to force their way through fields inclosed by deep ditches, difficult to be surmounted, especially by the horse who, in the face of an enemy, were obliged to advance in order; beyond these lay a morass, still more embarrassing.

The infantry was ordered to plunge in, and while the horse found a firm passage to the right, forced their way with fatigue and difficulty: the enemy fled instantly towards Duleek, and were pursued with great slaughter; when it was supposed that the right wing had made good its passage, the infantry in the centre, which was commanded by duke Schomberg, was put in motion. The Dutch guards first entered the river on the right opposite to Old bridge: the French protestants and Enniskilleners, Brandenburgers and English, at their several passes to the left, plunged in with alacrity, while the water in some places rose to their breasts, and obliged the infantry to support their arms above their heads.

The Dutch having gained the opposite bank, formed gradually, and drove the Irish from their posts: as they continued to advance, the squadrons and battalions of the enemy suddenly appeared in view behind the eminences which had concealed them: five of these battalions bore down upon the Dutch, who had already passed, but were firmly received and repulsed. The efforts of the Irish horse were equally unsuccessful; two attacks were repelled, when the French and Enniskilleners arriving to the support of the Dutch, drove back a third body of horse with considerable execution. Meanwhile general Hamilton led the Irish infantry to the very margin of the river to oppose the passage of the

French and English, but without making any impression; their cavalry attacked a squadron of Danes with such intrepidity that they fled back through the river: the Irish horse pursued, and on their return fell furiously on the French huguenots, who were instantly broken. The duke Schomberg, now rushed through the river, and placed himself at the head of the huguenot forces who were deprived of their leader, Caillemote. The Irish horse, who had broken the French protestants, wheeled through Old-bridge, in order to join their main body; but were here cut down by the Dutch and Enniskillēners. About sixteen of their squadron escaped, and returning furiously from the slaughter of their companions, were mistaken by the huguenots for some of their own friends and suffered to pass: they wounded Schomberg in the head, and were hurrying him forward, when he was killed by a shot from his own men.

After an incessant firing of an hour, there ensued some respite on both sides. The Irish retreated towards Donore, where James stood during the engagement, surrounded by his guards, and here drawing up in good order, once more advanced. William at the head of the Dutch, Danish, and English cavalry, which composed the right wing of his army, had now crossed the river, through a dangerous and difficult pass, where his horse floundering in the mud, obliged him to dismount, and receive the assistance of his attendants. When the enemy had advanced almost within musket shot of his infantry, they halted and again retreated to Donore; where facing about, they charged with such success, that the English cavalry, though led on by their king, was forced from their ground.

The battle, however, was still maintained with ardour; The king constantly mingled in the hottest part of the engagement where his presence gave double vigour to

his soldiers. The Irish infantry was finally repulsed. Hamilton at the head of his horse made one desperate effort to turn the fortune of the day ; but though their shock was furious, they were routed, and their general conveyed a prisoner to William. While the right wing of William's army, which had forced its way through difficult grounds, pursued the enemy close to Duleek, Lauzun, a French officer, rode up to James, who still continued at Donore, and advised him to retreat immediately, as he was in danger of being surrounded. Marching to Duleek at the head of Sarsfield's regiment, he was followed by his army, which poured through the pass, not without some annoyance from a party of English dragoons. When they reached the open ground, they drew up and cannonaded their pursuers. Their loss in this engagement was computed at fifteen hundred. That of William's army scarcely amounted to one third of this number.

James now looked on the contest as decided ; he hurried to Dublin, assembled the magistrates and council, told them that nothing remained but that he and they should shift for themselves. He advised them to set their prisoners at liberty, and submit to the prince of Orange. Having thrown out some reflexions on the courage of the Irish troops, the officers were provoked to retort ; and, contrasting the active part which William had taken in the battle, with that of James, who looked on as an indifferent spectator, they exclaimed, " Exchange kings, and we will once more fight the battle." James fled to Waterford, breaking down the bridges to prevent a pursuit, and instantly embarked for France.

EXERCISES.

In what disposition did William's army march towards the Boyne? What was the position occupied by James's army? For what purpose did William advance when his army was marching into camp? Who observed him? What stratagem was used? What danger did William escape? How was the false report of his death received in Paris? What was his resolution? Who tried to dissuade him? To what was James inattentive, and what did Hamilton recommend? Who commanded William's cavalry, and who his infantry of the right wing? What was their first movement? Who commanded the infantry in the centre? How did they cross the river Boyne? How were they opposed? Who were attacked furiously by the Irish horse? Who came to the support of the French huguenots? Who defeated the Irish horse? How was duke Schomberg killed? Where did the Irish retreat to? Where did the final attack take place? What was William's conduct during the engagement? Who was taken prisoner? Who advised James to retreat? What was the loss on each side? How did James act and how did he advise the magistrates of Dublin to act? How did he affront his troops? What was their reply? Where did James retreat to?

 CHAPTER VIII.

Irish determine to continue the war—William besieges Limerick—Is obliged to raise the siege—Siege of Athlone.

ALTHOUGH James had now abandoned his adherents, they determined to carry on the war, and the greatest part of his army marched to Limerick and Athlone; Dublin was threatened with all the evils of anarchy, when one Fitzgerald, a military officer, dissuaded the protestants who had been set free from executing their purposes of revenge, assumed the government and sent to William for assistance. This monarch advanced slowly towards the metropolis, whence he issued a de-

claration calculated to detach the lower orders from their leaders ; he promised pardon to all who would return to their dwellings and surrender their arms ; but declared his resolution of leaving the leaders to the event of the war. A commission was issued for seizing and securing all forfeitures accruing to the crown by the rebellion of the Irish. The conduct of the commissioners seizing without mercy, and that of William's adherents, who perpetually violated the protection given to the peasantry, served to increase the aversion from the new government, and induced many to return to their leaders.

Eight days after the battle of the Boyne, William divided his army. General Douglas was detached to reduce Athlone, while the king moved southward. On his march he received intelligence of the defeat of the united fleets of England and Holland by the French. Anxious to gain a secure station for his transports, he for this purpose, prepared to reduce Waterford and Dungannon. Wexford had already declared for him ; Clonmel was abandoned ; Waterford capitulated, as did Dungannon on the appearance of sir Cloudesly Shovel with sixteen frigates. Having obtained his object, and thinking his presence necessary in England, William prepared to return and leave the conduct of the Irish war to his generals. Receiving, however, intelligence that the Irish fleet had retired, he altered his intention and returned to his camp.

In the mean time, Douglas proceeded to Athlone : he marched as through an enemy's country ; his men plundering, and even murdering with impunity. To his summons Grace, the governor of Athlone, returned a defiance. Douglas then commenced a siege, and battered the town without any considerable effect. After several disasters he determined on retiring, and de-

camped unmolested at midnight. His army was accompanied by a number of protestants, who had accepted protections from the Irish army, and on the approach of Douglas had declared for the English. Douglas joined the royal army, which was advancing towards Limerick where the enemy's principal force lay. On the 9th of August, William began his approaches to the town; having driven the enemy from the open country, he encamped within cannon shot of the walls. His heavy artillery had not yet arrived, but he summoned the garrison to surrender: Boileau, the governor, expressed his surprise at the summons, and declared his resolution of making a vigorous defence. William was at the same time assured that this spirited answer by no means corresponded with the sentiments of the garrison, who were restrained from an immediate submission, only by the remonstrances of the governor, the duke of Berwick, and Sarsfield. His hopes of success were further strengthened, when Ginckle, his Dutch general, gained a ford about three miles from the town, where a strong detachment was posted at each side of the river.

Meanwhile, the garrison prepared for a vigorous defence. Having received information of the train expected from Dublin, and all the particulars concerning its route, Sarsfield determined on attempting to surprise it. He apprehended from the state of the garrison, that if this train should arrive, the enemy must soon become masters of Limerick. With a party of chosen cavalry, he crossed the Shannon at Killaloe, and in the mountains waited the approach of the convoy. The besiegers became acquainted with his motions, and William ordered sir John Lanier to march with five hundred horse, to meet the train—this order was executed too slowly. The train arrived within a day's march of the English camp, and the officer who commanded the convoy, ap-

prehending no danger, encamped carelessly. In this situation, Sarsfield rushed suddenly on them, and either killed or dispersed the whole party; then collecting the cannon, carriages, waggons, and ammunition, he filled the cannon with powder, fixed their mouths in the ground, and laying a train to the heap, fired it on his retreat. The explosion announced to Lanier the success of the enterprise.

The news of this disaster was received in the English camp with consternation; William alone maintained his composure. Furnishing his batteries with two cannon that escaped the general havock, and some guns brought from Waterford, he began his operations on the 27th of August. A breach was made, which was furiously stormed by 500 grenadiers. They were opposed with the greatest spirit, but at length made a temporary lodgment; the besieged then rallied, and returned to the breach, which they defended in the most gallant manner. The women joined in the defence, encouraged the men, advanced before them, defied the besiegers, and assailed them with stones. After a struggle of three hours, William ordered a retreat to be sounded: immediately after he dismounted his batteries, and gradually withdrew his troops unmolested by the garrison. Leaving the command of the army to count Solmes and Ginckle, and committing the civil government to two lords justices, lord Sidney and Thomas Covingsby, with a blank in their commission to be filled with a third name, he embarked for England at Duncannon fort.

While William lay before Limerick, the earl of Marlborough had been detached from England with 5000 men to effect the reduction of Cork and Kinsale. He was now reinforced by Ginckle, on whom the chief command had devolved by the departure of count Solmes. He succeeded against both these towns, which surren-

dered in twenty three days. Hitherto Ginckle had kept his troops posted in different places about the Shannon. When William abandoned the siege of Limerick, Boileau withdrew with his French troops to Galway to join his countrymen who were recalled and waited for transports. The Irish were not displeased at losing their allies; a good understanding had never subsisted between them. The natives were displeased at the preference continually shewn to the French officers. Left to the command of Sarsfield, a popular and distinguished commander, they now threatened some desperate attempt. But on the reduction of Cork and Kinsale, Ginckle withdrew his troops into winter quarters.

The country became now a prey to the soldiers of both armies: each unpaid, and unprovided with necessaries, depended on plunder for subsistence—in addition to the distresses caused by the troops, the country swarmed with a crowd of robbers, known by the name of rapparees, who lived in a state of nature, unrestrained by any laws of war or peace, and depending altogether on plunder for subsistence. To check these aggravations of the calamities of war, the new lords justices endeavoured to give some efficacy to the civil government; the commission of forfeitures was superseded, and several proclamations were published.

The motions of the Irish army now indicated some movement of importance; a magazine of forage was provided at Athlone for 5000 horse and dragoons for ten days. It soon appeared that an attack on the English garrison of Mullingar was intended; the garrison was accordingly reinforced, and Ginckle arrived at Mullingar with 2000 foot, and 1000 horse. [He advanced on the enemy, who were driven to the moat of Grenoge:

here a skirmish took place, and the Irish were finally driven, with some loss, to Athlone.

A considerable difference of opinion prevailed in the Irish army, with respect to the line of conduct now to be pursued. Tyrconnel had returned from France with no other aid than 8000*l.* and some cloathing; he declared for moderate measures, and proposed to submit; on this account he was accused of treachery, and to this it was imputed that in France he recommended to send officers, stores, and provisions to Ireland, without any troops. Sarsfield opposed the temporising counsels of Tyrconnel; the officers who declared for war flattered their followers with hopes of assistance from France. Some French officers gradually arrived, and repeated the assurances of speedy succours. At length monsieur St. Ruth landed at Limerick with a commission of chief commander. Sarsfield was highly indignant at this preference shown to a foreigner, to which he was not reconciled by the title of earl of Lucan, which he now received from James. As St. Ruth was not supplied with the stores which the Irish had expected, he resolved on a defensive war, ordered the towns on the Irish side of the Shannon to be strengthened, and with the main body took up a position behind Athlone.

Ginckle assembled his army at Mullingar, as it was determined to open the campaign with the siege of Athlone.—The fort of Ballymore, which was occupied by 1000 men, surrendered after sustaining the attack of Ginckle's army for one day; after driving into the town some of the enemy's infantry, the English army commenced the siege. Athlone is divided by the Shannon into two parts, which are connected by a bridge: from the eastern part the besieged were soon driven, but as the western arch of the bridge was broken down, the assail-

ants were stopped there; the passage of the river was a matter of great difficulty—the ford between the two towns was deep, narrow and stony: Ginckle formed a plan for passing the river at Lanesborough, but this design was discovered and prevented; he then commenced the construction of a wooden work, for the purpose of throwing planks over the broken arch: a serjeant and ten men in armour rushed from the opposite side and attempted to destroy these works—they were all slain; another party repeated the desperate attack with success; they threw all the planks and beams into the river, and two survivors returned in triumph.

Ginckle still determined to persevere, and completed a close gallery on the broken arch: it was then resolved in a council of war to pass the Shannon at three places; one party was to force the bridge, another to cross the ford below it, while a third party was to cross the river higher up on floats. The enemy discovered this design, the garrison was reinforced from the camp, and the best of the Irish troops were drawn to the works; still the besiegers determined to persevere, and all was anxiety on each side, when some grenadiers from the town set fire to a parcel of fascines which lay on the bridge. The flames soon destroyed the gallery, and the enterprize was abandoned.

Ginckle now summoned another council of war, in which it was determined to attempt the passage by the ford; this desperate attempt was made on the next day, and succeeded; the Irish were driven from the town, and the castle soon after surrendered. When the first intelligence that the enemy was crossing the ford, was conveyed to St. Ruth, he exclaimed that it was impossible; that they could not presume to attempt the town while he and his army lay so near: Sarsfield gave it as his opinion that the enterprize was not too difficult for English courage,

and advised him to send speedy succours. The French general was offended, and an altercation ensued, which was put an end to by a messenger who informed them that the enemy was in the town: after a fruitless attempt to drive them out, St. Ruth retired.

EXERCISES.

What was the determination of James's adherents? Where did his army march to? Who prevented disturbances in Dublin? What declaration did William publish? What commission was issued? How was the dislike of the Irish to William's Government increased? Who was sent to Athlone? What intelligence did William receive on his march? What towns capitulated? What was the conduct of the troops under Douglas? How was his summons received by the governor of Athlone? Did he retreat? To what town was the royal army advancing? What answer did the governor of Limerick give? What was William assured of? What strengthened his hopes of success? What information did Sarsfield receive? What measures did he take to prevent the arrival of the English cannon? Did he succeed? How did William act on the loss of his cannon? What was the first attack? How did the women act? To whom did William leave the command of his army? To whom did he commit the civil government? Who reduced Cork and Kinsale? After the departure of Boileau who commanded in Limerick? What additional distress did the country labour under beside the plundering of the soldiers? Where did the Irish meditate an attack? What was the result? What assistance did Tyrconnel bring? What displeased Sarsfield? Where did St. Ruth station his troops? Who attacked Athlone? What occurred on the attempt to throw planks across the broken arch? What prevented Ginckle from crossing the Shannon as he intended? What was his final determination? How did it succeed? How did St. Ruth receive Sarsfield's advice?

CHAPTER IX.

Ginckle issues a proclamation—Battle of Aughrim—Surrender of Limerick.

BOTH parties were now equally anxious to bring the contest to an issue, by some decisive action. Ginckle,

before he advanced in search of the enemy, deemed it both necessary, and just, to publish such a proclamation and encouragement to those who should submit, as might break the force of the enemy, and possibly prevent the necessity of an engagement; a material difference of opinion, however, had long existed between Ginckle and some of the great English subjects of Ireland. On this point their views were directed to the extermination of William's enemies, and not the reconciling them to his government. Ginckle published a proclamation of pardon, which the justices seemed at first inclined to disavow; but in two days after they published a proclamation offering advantageous terms to those who should surrender in three weeks.

This proclamation, however, was published too late to be of much use. Tho' some sued for protection, and many laid down their arms, still St. Ruth collected his forces from the different garrisons, posted them advantageously, and resolved to await the approach of the enemy. Ginckle also strengthened his army, by drawing from the English posts all the troops that could be spared.

On 10th of July, Ginckle marched from Athlone with 18000 men, and encamped along the river Suc, in the county of Roscommon: the Irish, 25000 strong, took their station to greater advantage, about three miles farther to the south-west. Their camp extended more than two miles along the heights of Kilcommeden, with a rivulet on their left, running between hills and morasses, skirted by a large bog, on the edge of which the castle of Aughrim commanded the only pass on that side to their camp: all along the front, about half a mile from their encampment, the bog extended to the right, where was another pass through a range of small hills opening into wider ground; the slope of Kilcommeden was intersected with hedges and ditches communicating with each other, and lined with musketeers.

Saint Ruth from his eminence, seeing the English cross the river, and prepare to give him battle, drew out his main army in front of his camp. He rode to every squadron and battalion, and animated them to the most vigorous exertions of their valour.

On the 12th of July at noon, (the fogs of the morning having hitherto prevented them) the English army advanced in as good order as their uneven ground would admit; it was in the first place deemed necessary to gain the pass on the right of the enemy, but a small party of Danes sent to force it, fled instantly at the appearance of an inferior body of the enemy. Some English dragoons were next employed, who, after an obstinate contest of an hour, forced their way even beyond the bog. It was now debated, whether the battle should not be deferred to the next morning; but the council, with difficulty, resolved upon an immediate engagement. By the advice of general Mackay, it was determined to begin the attack on the enemy's right wing; about the hour of five in the afternoon the left wing of the English advanced against the enemy, who obstinately maintained their posts, defending their ditches, until the combatants of each side closed with each other; when retiring by their lines of communication, they flanked their assailants, and charged them furiously. The engagement was thus continued for an hour and a half, when St. Ruth found it necessary to draw a considerable part of the cavalry from his left, to support his right wing. Mackay seized the favourable moment, and, while the cavalry were in motion to gain the pass by Aughrim castle, which stood on the side of the bog, several regiments of infantry in the center were ordered to march through the morass, extending along their front, and to post themselves on the lowest ditches, until the horse should gain the passage, and wheel from the right to

support their charge ; the infantry plunged into the bog, where they instantly sunk to the middle ; and no sooner had they with difficulty gained the opposite side, than they received a fire from the hedges and trenches occupied by the enemy : they advanced, however, with intrepidity, the enemy in the mean time retiring to draw them forward, until forgetting their orders, they pursued almost to the main body of the Irish ; both horse and foot now poured down upon them, in front and flank, forced them from their ground with great slaughter, drove some of them back into the bog, and made several prisoners, while St. Ruth exclaimed in rapture that he would drive the English to the very walls of Dublin.

His attention, however, was soon diverted to the English cavalry on the left, commanded by Talmash, who, seeing the alarming disorder of the center, pushed with incredible ardour close by the walls of the castle, through all the fire of the enemy ; St. Ruth asked some of his officers " what do the English mean " ? he was answered, to force their way by our right ; he exclaimed " they are brave fellows ! it is a pity they should be so exposed." Through a narrow and dangerous pass, Mackay, Talmash, and Rouvigny, now gradually pressed forward from the right, bearing down all opposition, and gave the infantry of the center an opportunity of rallying, and regaining their former ground : the left wing fought with great valour, and was opposed with equal intrepidity. St. Ruth, now finding it necessary to make an impression on the enemy's cavalry in their rapid progress from the right, rode down from his station on the hill of Kilcommeden, and having directed one of his batteries where to point its fire, led a body of horse against them ; while he was conducting this enterprize, a cannon ball deprived him of life. The intelligence of this event, ran

quickly through the lines ; the cavalry halted, and being without orders, returned towards their former station ; the whole Irish army was now dismayed ; Sarsfield, on whom the command devolved, had been neglected by St. Ruth since their altercation at Athlone ; as the order of battle had not been communicated to him, he could not support the dispositions of the late general. The English, in the mean time, pressed forward, and drove the enemy to their camp, whence the latter, being still pursued, fled precipitately, to the foot of a bog, and the horse towards Loughrea.

In this battle, and in a bloody pursuit of three miles, seven thousand of the Irish army were slain, while on the side of the conquerors only seven hundred fell and about a thousand were wounded.

In a few days Ginckle led his troops to Galway ; the garrison consisted of seven weak regiments, but they expected reinforcements ; when, however, it was found that no assistance could be had, the townsmen and magistrates proposed to surrender ; this was at first opposed by the garrison, but they soon changed their sentiments, and a treaty of capitulation commenced. The garrison was allowed to march out with all the honours of war ; a free pardon was granted to the inhabitants, with full possession of their estates and liberties under the acts of settlement and explanation—the Roman catholic clergy and laity were allowed the private exercise of their religion, their lawyers permitted to practice, and such as had estates to bear arms. The terms granted by this capitulation induced many, immediately after, to lay down their arms, and take the oath of allegiance to the king and queen.

The surrender of Galway was considered by many as an event, the immediate consequence of which must be the final reduction of Ireland. Yet the Irish under the

command of Sarsfield, spoke with confidence of meeting the enemy; Ginckle in the mean time, proceeded cautiously. Limerick, to which he now approached, was, notwithstanding the apparent resolution of the garrison, a scene of discord and jealousy. Tyrconnel was dead; three new lords justices, Fitton, Nagle, and Plowden, had assumed the government in the name of the abdicated king; and declared for submission; but Sarsfield, brave, violent and enterprizing, was averse from all accommodation. The French generals expected succours from abroad, and declared for war.

In the mean time, Ginckle strengthened his army by withdrawing every garrison that could be spared; he secured the passes of the Shannon; and his artillery was brought up under a strong escort, with every possible precaution. On the 25th day of August he advanced to the town, his approaches to which were made in the same manner as in the former siege. Perceiving that the only effectual means of reducing the town, was to invest it on all sides, he resolved to gain, if possible, the opposite side of the river; and to conceal his design, gave such orders as indicated an intention of raising the siege. The Irish saw with exultation his batteries dismounted, and, lulled into security, never suspected any danger, until a bridge of tin boats was almost completed in the night. A considerable body of forces was thus conveyed into an island, between which and the mainland the river was fordable. Notwithstanding this success, it was debated whether the siege should be carried on, or converted into a blockade; so great were the difficulties which still remained of reducing the town. In this situation, Ginckle issued a declaration, promising pardon and restitution of their estates to such of the garrison and inhabitants of Limerick, as should submit within eight days from that time. This declara-

tion not being attended by any immediate effects, Ginckle was under difficulties how to proceed : at length, it was resolved to lead another body of troops across the river. On the 22nd of September, Ginckle with a considerable body of cavalry and infantry, animated with the intelligence of the reduction of Sligo by the earl of Granard, marched over the bridge of boats. Their advanced guards were at first repulsed, but in the end repelled the enemy. The grenadiers, supported by four regiments, were ordered to assault the works which covered Thomond bridge. Here the contest was for some time desperately maintained, until, at length, the English broke, routed, and pursued the enemy. A French major, who commanded at Thomond bridge, fearing the grenadiers would close with his own party, ordered the draw-bridge to be raised, and thus left the fugitives to the mercy of their pursuers.

On the 23rd of September, after the garrison had for many hours fired from their batteries with uncommon fury, they beat a parley. The besiegers granted a truce, to continue for three days, to give time for the horse, now encamped at some distance, to take advantage of the projected capitulation. On the last day of the truce the Irish leaders proposed the terms on which they offered to capitulate. They required an act of indemnity for all past offences, with full enjoyment of the estates they had formerly possessed ; freedom for the Roman catholic worship, and an establishment of one Romish ecclesiastic in each parish. They demanded, that Roman catholics should be declared fully qualified for every office civil and military ; that they should be admitted into all corporations : and that the Irish army should be kept up, and paid in the same manner with the king's other troops, if they should be willing to serve. Ginckle refused to grant these terms,

and gave orders for new batteries. By a second deputation, he was desired to propose such terms on his part as he could grant. He consented that all Irish Roman catholics should enjoy the exercise of their religion, as in the reign of Charles II., and promised that their majesties should endeavour to procure them farther security in this particular, when a parliament could be convened. He engaged, that all included in the capitulation should enjoy their estates, and pursue their employments freely, as in the reign of the same king Charles; that their gentry should be allowed the use of arms, and that no oath should be required of any except that of allegiance. The garrison readily accepted these concessions as the basis of a treaty. On the first day of October the lords justices arrived in the camp. On the third, the capitulation was adjusted and signed; the civil articles by the chief governors, Porter and Coningsby, and the military by the general. In these it was stipulated that every facility should be afforded to such of the Irish troops as wished to enter into foreign service, and accordingly 14,000 of them went to the continent.

EXERCISES.

What proclamation did Ginckle think proper to publish? What effect had it? On what day did Ginckle march from Athlone? Where did he encamp? What were the numbers of the two armies? What position did St. Ruth take? On what day was the battle of Aughrim fought? What was debated by the English council of war? What was the order of battle? What was St. Ruth's exclamation? What was his remark on the conduct of the English cavalry? For what purpose did he leave his station on the hill of Kilcommeden? On what account did the death of St. Ruth cause such dismay in his army? Who succeeded to the chief command of the Irish army? What were the numbers killed on each side? What force was in Galway when Ginckle arrived there? On what terms did it surrender? To what

town did Ginckle now approach? What was its internal situation? How did Ginckle strengthen his army? What measures did he take to invest Limerick? What intelligence animated his troops? What occurred at Thomond bridge? What was the conduct of a French major? On what terms did the Irish leaders propose to capitulate? Were they accepted? To what terms did Ginckle consent? Who signed the articles of capitulation? What number of the Irish troops went to the continent?

RECAPITULATION.

In what year did the restoration of Charles take place, and how was it received in Ireland? How was the bill of indemnity prepared with respect to Ireland? What apprehension did the English parliament express with respect to Ireland, and what was done in consequence? What occurred respecting religious matters, and how did Ormond advise the king? What was the substance of the king's declaration? Who were dissatisfied with the declaration, and why? Of whom was the house of commons composed in 1661? What bill chiefly occupied the attention of parliament? For what purpose were agents sent to London, and by what parties? What did the parties respectively urge before the privy council, and how did the king decide? How did the decisions of the court of claims alarm the adventurers and soldiers? How did they act in consequence? What directions did the king give for producing a final accommodation? What severe clause against the Roman catholics did the bill of explanation contain? How did the English parliament interfere with the trade of Ireland? What means did Ormond take to compensate the Irish for the loss of their trade with England? Who were the remonstrants and the anti-remonstrants? Which of those parties was countenanced by lord Berkeley when lord lieutenant? What petition did the Roman catholics present in 1661, and how was it received? What reason is assigned for the appointment of Ormond after the removal of Essex from the vice-royalty? In 1677 what plot occupied the public attention in Ireland? Why was it intended to remove Ormond in 1685? When did Charles II. die, and who succeeded him? What system of policy was pursued by James II. towards Ireland? To what consequences did the conduct of James lead? When did William III. land in England? How was the intelligence of the proceedings in England received in Ireland? Where was resistance to James first made in Ireland? What effects did the example of Derry produce? What means did William take for procuring the resignation of Tyrconnel? When did James land in Ireland?

What proclamation did he issue on his arrival? Which were the principal incidents in the siege of Derry? What was the issue of the battle between James's troops and the Enniskillen men? What were the acts passed by the parliament assembled under James? Which of those acts was chiefly obnoxious to the English interest? What means did James take to raise money? When did William send assistance to his Irish adherents? What were the operations of Schomberg's army? What made William determine to carry on the war in Ireland in person? When did he arrive? What was the first act of his civil authority? What battle was fought immediately after his arrival? What effects did this battle produce? What resolution did the adherents of James come to after his flight? What use did William make of his army after the battle of the Boyne? What was the result of Douglas's expedition against Athlone? What expedition did Sarsfield make during the siege of Limerick? What was the result of the siege of Limerick? When did king William leave Ireland? What other military operations were carried on in the south of Ireland? What was the state of the country during the winter? What were the different opinions held in the Irish army at this time? Who was sent by James to take the command of the Irish army? What were the military operations between the arrival of St. Ruth and the battle of Aughrim? When was that battle fought, and what was the number of troops on each side? What town surrendered after the battle of Aughrim? What put an end to the war in Ireland?

BOOK THE TENTH.

CHAPTER I.

English parliament assume the power of legislating for Ireland—Reign of Anne—of George I.—George II.—American war.

PERIOD V.

A. D. As soon as tranquillity was restored, the Eng-
1691. lish parliament began to exercise a supreme au-
thority over Ireland. They passed a bill for the
exclusion of Roman catholics from both houses of par-

A. D. liament. In Ireland, the right of originating a
1692. bill of supply by the commons, became a
source of contest between the commons and the
crown; of two bills sent over certified according to the
principles of Poyning's law; one only was passed, and
that on account of the great urgency of the case. Un-

A. D. der the administration of lord Capel several pe-
1695. nal statutes were added to those already enacted
against the Roman catholics. The English par-

A. D. liament passed a bill for the purpose of annihilat-
1698. ing the woollen manufactures of Ireland, and
to prevent her from exporting wool to any coun-
try but England. Another bill was passed, resuming
seventy-six grants made by the king of the forfeited es-
tates in Ireland.

A. D. William died and was succeeded by his sister-
in-law. In his reign there were four sessions of
1701. parliament. From the reign of queen Anne,
the Irish parliament began to assemble biennially.

A. D. 1703. The Irish parliament presented to the duke of Ormond, lord lieutenant, a bill to prevent the further growth of popery, to be transmitted to England for the legal sanction. The enactments of this bill, the severest of all the penal statutes, were calculated to prevent Roman catholics from acquiring and securing property. The English cabinet added a clause to it, rendering it impossible for any person to hold any office in Ireland, or to be a magistrate of any corporation, who should not receive the sacrament according to the rites of the established church. As this clause was a bar to the dissenters as well as to the Roman catholics, it was supposed, that to prevent its being passed, the bill would have been abandoned. The Irish parliament, however, passed the bill with the additional clause, promising the dissenters that it should soon be repealed as far as regarded them. The Irish peers proposed a union with England which was coldly received there. On the death of Anne, George, elector of Hanover, succeeded to the British throne without opposition. The Irish parliament recognized the king's title, set a price on the pretender's head, and attainted the duke of Ormond for adhering to him. An appeal was made to the Irish house of peers against a decree of the court of Exchequer, which was reversed by the lords. The party ag-
 1710.
 1715.
 1718. grievied by this decision, appealed to the English house of lords, where the decree of the court of Exchequer was confirmed. This case gave rise to a contest between the two houses. In the end, the English lords brought in a bill, which passed into a law, for the better securing the dependency of Ireland on the crown of Great Britain. By this it was enacted, that the British parliament, had of right, full power to make laws to bind the people and the kingdom of Ireland, and that the house of lords of Ireland had not any appellant jurisdiction.

A. D. The Irish parliament passed an act to relieve
1719. dissenters from penalties inflicted on them by
the existing laws.

A. D. Heads of a bill to amend the acts against the
1723. further growth of popery, introducing additional
severities against the Roman catholics, were pre-
sented to the duke of Grafton, the lord lieutenant, to be
transmitted to England for the usual sanction ; it was,

A. D. however, suppressed in that kingdom. A patent
1724. was granted to one Wood for coining copper
half pence and farthings, for the use of Ireland,
to the amount of 108,000*l.* ; they were produced from
materials not worth 8000*l.* This measure was op-
posed by all parties with the greatest vehemence. The
ruinous consequences of it were ably shewn in the
Drapiers letters written by the celebrated Dean Swift.

After the public had been kept in great agitation
for some time by this project, the patent was re-

A. D. voked in the following year. On the death of
1727. George the I. he was succeeded by his son,
George II.

A. D. An act was passed by the Irish parliament, in which
1728. it was provided that no Roman catholic should
vote at the election of a member of parliament.

During this and the following year, Ulster suffered
under a great scarcity of provisions : many emigrated to
America. In the south, riots were committed by the
people of several towns, who wished to prevent the ex-
portation of corn for the use of the northerns, dreading
a dearth among themselves. Several acts were passed
for the encouragement of agriculture and the linen ma-
nufactures, and for the better maintainance of the cler-

A. D. gy. A law was enacted for promoting tillage,
1730. and the better employment of the poor, which was
assisted by the king's remitting his hereditary
duties on wool and yarn exported to England.

A. D. 1731. A motion was made in the Irish commons for granting to his majesty, for twenty-one years, the supplies for paying the interest and principal of the national debt, which were usually granted from session to session. The motion was lost by a majority of

A. D. 1735. one only. After some discussion and deliberation, the house of commons came to a resolution, declaring that the suing for and recovering the tithe of agistment, or of dry and barren cattle, was highly injurious. In consequence of this vote, which was not, however, at all compulsory, the clergy ceased to collect this tithe, and confined their demands to sheep and tillage.

A. D. 1745. At this period, an alarming rebellion broke out in Scotland. The object of it was to place Charles Edward Stuart, son of the pretender, on the English throne. While it raged, Ireland remained in perfect tranquility; owing chiefly to the good sense and liberal policy of its governor, the earl of Chesterfield. Considerable uneasiness was at this time given to government by the writings of Charles Lucas. As a citizen of Dublin, he had taken an active part in a contest between the board of aldermen and common council of Dublin. He published the result of a laborious investigation, shewing that encroachments had been made by the former, without legal sanction, on the privileges of the latter. Turning his attention then to the consideration of the rights of Ireland, as a separate and independent kingdom; his publications, particularly a memorial to the earl of Hartington, the lord lieutenant, gave so much alarm, that the house of commons voted, that he was an enemy to his country, and addressed the viceroy, requesting the prosecution of him by the attorney general, and the issuing a proclamation for the seizure of his person. Alarmed for his safety he retired

into exile, but in a few years returned, and was elected by the city of Dublin, their representative in parliament.

A. D. The application of some surplus revenue gave
1751. rise to a question, whether in the king or the commons was the right of disposing of this surplus? In the bills introduced for its disposal, it was inserted that his majesty consented to the proposed dis-

A. D. position. The commons objected to the word
1753. *consent*, and threw out a bill which contained it. Meantime, the money was withdrawn from the kingdom by virtue of a king's letter.

A. D. For some time the kingdom had been threat-
1760. ened with a French invasion, in which three armaments were to co-operate; of these, one only, under Thurot, reached Ireland. After gaining possession of Carrickfergus, which was for some time bravely defended by colonel Jennings, tho' quite unprepared for an attack, Thurot relinquished the enterprize, on being informed of the defeat of Conflans, and of the approach of the hostile troops.—He fell in action near the Isle of Man, in which his three frigates were captured by commodore Elliot.—By the death of George II. his present majesty, son of Fredrick prince of Wales, who died during his father's life time, ascended the throne.

A. D. Different parts of the kingdom were for several
1762. years, disturbed by local associations which under the names of levellers, white-boys, and hearts of oak, proceeded to obtain by force of arms the redress of

A. D. grievances of which they complained. Irish par-
1768. liaments, originally annual, had become of equal length with the monarch's life, unless dissolved by royal prerogative. A bill was now transmitted to England limiting their duration to seven years: it was returned with the addition of a year, and passed.—Ulster

A. D. became disturbed by the hearts of steel; those
 1772. were men who had been tenants on the estate of
 the marquis of Donegal; on the expiration of their
 leases, it was proposed to let to those only who could
 pay large fines: numbers were thus dispossessed, and uni-
 ting. committed many outrages. Some of their members
 having been tried, and acquitted at Carrickfergus; an
 act of parliament was passed, ordering their trials to be
 held in counties different from those in which their of-
 fences were committed; under this act some of the offen-
 ders were tried in Dublin, but they were acquitted.

The attempt of Great Britain to raise a revenue from
 the taxation of her American colonies, had engaged her
 in an eventful contest with her transatlantic subjects; the
 A. D. effects were highly injurious to Ireland—shut out
 1778. from the American market, the manufacture of
 Irish linens had declined, prevented by an embargo
 from the exportation of provisions, drained by many re-
 mittances for the payment of Irish troops employed
 abroad, and the interest of a national debt to creditors,
 many of whom resided in England, trade became stag-
 nant; internal products fell to a low rate: rents and taxes
 could not be paid, and the revenue failed—to relieve
 the kingdom from its distresses, the English house of com-
 mons were about to pass a bill, which would have given
 to Ireland many valuable commercial advantages: against
 this measure, however, the mercantile interests of Bri-
 tain petitioned with so much violence, that the house
 was induced to negative the bills founded on their own
 previous resolutions. In the same year the Irish parlia-
 ment passed a bill by which Roman catholics, on taking
 and subscribing an oath of allegiance and declaration
 prescribed, were enabled to acquire full property in
 land, so far as a lease of 999 years; and were relieved
 from a law by which a son might force a settlement

from his father by professing conformity to the established religion.

By this time France had joined the American states, and Ireland was once more threatened with a French invasion, at a time when the royal forces in the kingdom were reduced to a very insignificant number.

EXERCISES.

What was the conduct of the English parliament towards Ireland on the restoration of tranquillity? What was done under lord Capel's administration? What bill were passed in the English parliament respecting wool? In what year did William die, and who succeeded him? What bill was presented by the Irish parliament? What clause was added to it in England? What promise was made to the dissenters? In what year did queen Anne die, and by whom was she succeeded? Why was the duke of Ormond attainted? What bill was passed in the English house of lords limiting the power of the Irish parliament? What bill was passed in Ireland, but suppressed in England? What patent was granted to Wood? Who wrote against it? Who succeeded George I.? What occurred in Ulster? What acts were passed in the year 1730? What in the year 1731? What acts were passed respecting tithes? Who was Charles Lucas, and what were his writings? What was voted respecting him? What was the dispute about the surplus revenue? Who landed at Carrickfergus? What induced him to re-embark? What was his fate? Who succeeded George the II.? What disturbed Ireland? What bill was passed respecting the duration of parliament? What disturbed Ulster, and what act was passed in consequence? What distresses were felt by Ireland during the war with America? What prevented the English parliament from relieving them? What act was passed in favour of Roman catholics? What danger threatened Ireland on the French joining the American states?

CHAPTER II.

Volunteers—Exertions to procure a free trade—Concessions of the English parliament—Dungannon meeting—Final adjustment between the two kingdoms.

THE people of Ireland finding that if the threatened invasion should take place, they must depend on their

own exertions to repel the foe, and save the kingdom from the grasp of France, formed themselves into companies under the name of volunteers: officers were elected, arms and uniforms were purchased, and sixteen thousand muskets were delivered by government to the A. D. volunteers. When Spain joined the hostile powers, and the danger of invasion was increased, 1779. the spirit of arming for defence of the kingdom rose with it, and the volunteers soon amounted to 42,000.

The influence of this armed body soon became visible in the bold and determined manner in which the independency of Ireland was asserted. Parliament met on the 12th of October, and on the motion of Hussey Burgh, it was resolved unanimously to insert in the address to the king these words: "We beg leave to assure your majesty, that it is not by temporary expedients, but by a free trade alone that this nation is now to be saved from impending ruin." This was followed up, by the commons voting their bills of supply for six months only. In the November following, lord North, the prime minister, laid before the British commons three propositions for the freedom of Irish commerce, without meeting any opposition: they were in substance the same as those which had been rejected in the foregoing year, but containing greater concessions, and particularly the free exportation of woollens. Bills were introduced, founded on two of the propositions, which were, without difficulty, passed into laws; the final discussion of the third, concerning a trade with the British plantations, was deferred, as more complex, till after the recess at Christmas.

Notwithstanding these concessions, considerable distrust pervaded the public mind, for lord North, to gain the acquiescence of the British traders, had represented

them as a boon resumable at pleasure ; and an opinion daily gained ground, that without a legislature of its own, totally independent, the commerce of this kingdom would be precarious. Declarations to this effect were published by different bodies of the volunteers ; the substance of which, Mr. Grattan submitted to the house of commons, in April, in a motion for 1780. their agreeing to a resolution, " That no power on earth, save the king, lords, and commons of Ireland, had a right to make laws for Ireland." This motion was withdrawn, but bills were passed for the modification of Poynings' law, the independence of the judges, and then parliament was prorogued. The volunteers had now encreased to 50,000 men.

A. D. On the 15th of February, a meeting of the representatives of 143 corps of volunteers of the 1781. province of Ulster, was held at Dungannon, where resolutions were passed, asserting that the claim of any body of men other than the king, lords and commons of Ireland, to make laws to bind this kingdom, was unconstitutional and illegal, and a grievance of which it was their decided, and unalterable determination to seek a speedy and effectual redress. They also expressed their approbation of the relaxation of the penal statutes : these resolutions were adopted by all the other volunteer corps of Ireland. Parliament still negatived all questions connected with the commercial and political state of the kingdom. Two bills, in favour of Roman catholics, were passed, one for extending their privileges with respect to landed property, and for the removal of some penalties from such Romish clergy as should take the oath of allegiance and be registered ; the other for allowing, under a few restrictions, catholics to educate youth and to be guardians to children.

A. D. 1782. Meantime, the English ministry had lost America, and with it their places. On a change of administration, the English and Irish parliaments received messages from his majesty, "recommending to their most serious consideration, the state of affairs in Ireland, in order to such a final adjustment as might give mutual satisfaction to both kingdoms." In an address in answer to this message to the Irish house, the independence of Ireland was again asserted. This was followed by the enacting of laws, abolishing all interference of English privy councils with Irish bills, placing the parliament of Ireland in the same state of independence, with respect to its legislation, as that of Great Britain. Acts were also passed for the right of habeas corpus, and for the independence of the judges. The British parliament repealed the act by which the Irish house of peers had been deprived of their supreme judicial power in Ireland. The Irish parliament then voted 50,000*l.* to Mr. Grattan for his services in the struggle which had terminated so successfully. The majority of the nation considered that the independence of the Irish parliament was now satisfactorily ascertained; others were of opinion, that an express renunciation by the British parliament, of all right to legislate for Ireland was still necessary. Under this impression, a motion was made in the Irish commons, by Mr. Flood, for a bill to remove all doubt on the subject; but it was negatived. This parliament repealed the sacramental test which had hitherto excluded dissenters from offices of trust under the crown.

Lord Mansfield, the chief justice of England, having retained, and adjudged a cause beyond the time prescribed by the Irish parliament, the opinion of Mr. Flood gained ground; and to remove all ground for com-

A. D. 1783. complaint, parliament passed a bill, renouncing in express terms, the legislative authority of the British parliament in Ireland.

EXERCISES.

How did the people of Ireland act on the prospect of an invasion? To what number did the volunteers amount in the year 1779? What words were inserted in the address to the king? What proposition did lord North lay before the British commons? What was granted, and what was postponed? How did lord North represent these grants? What declarations were published by the volunteers? What motion did Mr Grattan submit to the house of commons? What bills passed? To what number did the volunteers amount in the year 1780? What resolutions were passed by the volunteers of Ulster? Were they adopted by other corps? What bills were passed in favour of Roman catholics? What message did the English and Irish parliaments receive from the king? What answer was given by the Irish parliament, and what acts were passed? What act was repealed by the English parliament? To whom was 50,000*l.* granted? What motion was made by Mr. Flood, and with what result? What act was repealed by parliament in favour of dissenters? What bill was passed with respect to British authority in Ireland?

CHAPTER III.

Parliamentary reform—Orde's resolutions—Regency—French revolution—United Irishmen—French fleet appears in Bantry Bay.

THE Irish volunteers, who had originally associated for the purpose of repelling invasion, having, in the mean time taken an active part in procuring the renunciation of the power hitherto exercised over their country by a British parliament and privy council, were of opinion that something more remained to be done. They

next turned their attention to working a reform in parliament; having just received a proof, in the acts of the legislature, that such reform was not wanting.

A. D. This year the order of St. Patrick was instituted. An application was made by some self-ex-
1783. patriated citizens of Geneva, to the British government, for leave to settle in Ireland. The proposal was favourably received; a sum of money was ordered from the treasury for building a town in the county Waterford, for the reception of the emigrants; and a tract of land, which was shortly to revert to the crown, was destined for their use. But as the emigrants insisted on being represented in parliament, and on being governed by their own laws, the treaty was broken off, and the settlement never took place.

Several meetings of volunteer delegates and deputies now took place, in different parts of the country, to prepare a plan of reform; and on the meeting of parliament, a national convention, consisting of delegates from the four provinces, assembled in Dublin. They prepared a plan, and Mr. Flood, adjourning from the convention to the house of commons, moved for leave to bring in a bill for the more equal representation of the people. This motion was negatived by a large majority, after a warm debate, in which it was urged that it was inconsistent with the dignity of the house to receive a bill which originated with an armed body.

A. D. The question was again brought forward, and
1784. negatived by a large majority, although Mr. Pitt, who had gained great popularity by his advocating the cause of reform, was then prime minister. A national congress, composed of delegates from counties and towns, soon after assembled in Dublin to further this object.

The commercial state of the country, and the discon-

tent manifested on the subject, produced an address from parliament to the king, praying for the establishment of a more advantageous system of commerce between Great Britain and Ireland. Eleven propositions on this subject were transmitted from the prime minister A. D. to the Irish parliament and agreed to. On their 1785. being returned for the discussion of the English legislature, petitions against the system poured in from all parts of England. Mr. Pitt then new modelled his plan: several amendments were made in both houses, and when the propositions, now increased to twenty in number, were returned to the Irish parliament, they presented quite a new system. Mr. Orde, the secretary, moved for leave to bring in a bill for the establishment of a commercial system, founded on the new propositions. After a vehement and protracted debate, his motion was passed, but only by a majority of 19 in a house consisting of 235 members. The smallness of this majority induced the ministers to abandon the measure.

A. D. The south of Munster was greatly disturbed 1786. by bands of armed midnight assassins, who, under the name of right-boys and white-boys, associated for the purpose of resisting the payment of tithes, limiting the rents of lands, and opposing the collection of hearth money. It became necessary to pass a bill for the prevention of tumultuous assemblies and illegal combinations.

A. D. The two kingdoms were greatly divided, on a 1789. question arising out of a very distressing circumstance. His majesty had been attacked in summer, by an illness, which was attended with so much derangement, that, at the close of the year, he became incapable of discharging the duties of his royal station. It was proposed in the British parliament, to

make the prince of Wales regent under certain restrictions. The Irish parliament, on the other hand, "requested his royal highness to take upon him the government of this kingdom, during his majesty's present indisposition, under the title of prince regent of Ireland, with all regal prerogatives belonging to the crown thereof." The lord lieutenant having refused to transmit this address to the prince, five commissioners were appointed by parliament, to attend his royal highness with their application. The recovery, however, of his majesty rendered it altogether unnecessary. The different opinions that existed on this subject afforded a very forcible illustration of the inconvenience, if not the danger, of having, under the same sceptre, two independent legislatures which, while they acknowledged one common monarch, might in such unhappy cases, each appoint a separate regent, or confer on the same person that power in one kingdom, which might, in the other, be withheld.

A. D. The progress of the French revolution, which ended in the temporary overthrow of monarchy 1790. in France, had now engaged the attention of all Europe. The desolating spirit, which had involved that kingdom in anarchy and blood, soon began to extend its influence, though with considerably diminished force, to the surrounding nations. It found in Ireland many who applauded and approved the principles and the theory on which this great political regeneration had taken place, while the fruits which were borne by the tree of liberty, gave to others a violent distaste for its cultivation.

Parliamentary reform, and catholic emancipation were the great political questions, which were now agitated. To obtain these objects, an association, under the name of united Irishmen, was formed, 1791. consisting of both protestants and Roman catho-

lics, "for the purpose," as their declaration expressed, "of forwarding a brotherhood of affection, a communion of rights, and an union of power, among Irishmen of all religious persuasions, and thereby to obtain a complete reform in the legislature, founded on the principles of civil, political, and religious liberty."

The views, however, of many of this body soon became directed, if they were not so from the beginning, to other objects: a separation from Great Britain, and an Irish republic, were the goal which they hoped ultimately to gain. The Roman catholics now disavowed some obnoxious opinions which had been urged against them in and out of parliament; they likewise formed a convention, composed of delegates from several towns and counties which assembled in Dublin; and having prepared a petition to the king, closed its proceedings by electing a permanent committee. An armed association, called national guards, was formed, and a day was fixed on for a general muster of these bands; but intimidated by a proclamation issued by government against seditious assemblies, they did not meet. The petition of the Roman catholics was graciously received by the king, who recommended the relief of his subjects, of A. D. that persuasion, to the Irish parliament. This 1793. year Roman catholics were admitted to the elective franchise. Acts were passed to prevent the importation of arms, &c. without licence, and to prevent the election or appointment of conventions, or other unlawful assemblies, under the pretence of petitioning. This latter act prevented a project of a national convention at Athlone. Some parts of Leinster and Munster were greatly disturbed by an association called defenders, who seem to have been actuated the by same views as the white boys and right-boys, while their measures were more systematically concerted.

Dissaffection began now to wear a bolder face ; several arrests and trials for high treason took place ; many fled out of the kingdom. A militia of 16,000 men was raised. The question of reform was still kept alive in parliament ; but was brought forward there on grounds too narrow for the democratic principles that then pervaded the kingdom, and met with as little support out of the house as it did within.

A. D. On lord Fitzwilliam's being made lord lieutenant of Ireland, it was generally understood, 1795. that the Roman catholics would be relieved from their remaining disqualifications. They presented petitions for this purpose, and leave was given in the commons to bring in a bill conformable to their prayer. But before the affair could be brought to a decision, lord Fitzwilliam was recalled, and the bill was rejected on the second reading. An act was passed for the establishment of a Roman catholic college, to educate candidates for the Romish priesthood.

To meet the danger which now threatened the kingdom, the hands of government were strengthened, by the passing of an insurrection act and the suspension of A. D. the habeas corpus act. Government began to 1796. embody an armed yeomanry in addition to the troops of the line and the militia. The Irish rebels had long pressed the French government to aid their intended attempt, by an invasion of Ireland. For this purpose, a fleet sailed from Brest with a number of troops on board. In the month of December, some of the ships reached Bantry Bay, the rest had been separated by a storm ; the commander of the land forces was on board one of the missing ships ; and the French admiral, hesitating to disembark the troops, returned with the loss of three of his fleet.

EXERCISES.

What did the volunteers wish to attain? In what year was the order of St. Patrick instituted? What offer was made by the expatriated citizens of Geneva? How was it received? Why did it fail? What meetings now took place and for what purpose? What did Mr. Flood move in the House of Commons? On what subject did the Irish Parliament address the king? With what success? What disturbed the south of Munster? For what purpose did the white-boys assemble? What laws were enacted to repress them? How did the Irish parliament act during the king's illness? What effect did the French revolution produce in Ireland? What association was now formed in Ireland? What name did they call themselves by, and what was their declaration? What were their views? What were their proceedings? What reception did the petition of the Roman catholics meet from the king? In what year was the militia embodied? What was expected on lord Fitzwilliam's being appointed lord lieutenant? What defeated these expectations? What college was established? What other troops were embodied beside the militia? What attempt was made by the French to assist the rebels? How did it succeed?

 CHAPTER IV.

Rebellion breaks out—Attack of Carlow—Battle at Tara—Enniscorthy and Wexford taken—Battle of Ross—Operations in the North—Battle of Vinegar Hill—French land at Killalla—Suppression of the rebellion.

A. D. THE leaders of the united Irishmen renewed their negotiations with France, for a sufficient force to aid their intended insurrection. The northerners were eager to avow themselves: the insurgents of Leinster were still anxious for foreign aid. In autumn, assurances were received from the French government that troops, destined for Ireland,

were actually embarked. These were, however, disembarked again, and though the Dutch fleet, which was to have conveyed these succours, was defeated by admiral Duncan, still the leaders of the Irish conspirators were encouraged to hope for immediate assistance.

A. D. Every day gave some new proof of the alarming state of the country. But by means of the information which government had obtained, particularly from one Reynolds, who had been deeply engaged in the schemes of the rebels, the most considerable of the rebel leaders were arrested; and such measures adopted, that the chiefs, who still remained at large, determined to make their long contemplated attempt without waiting for foreign aid, before the arrival of which, their adherents might be completely dispirited.

The 23rd of May was fixed on for the commencement of the rebellion, and the stoppage of the mail coaches immediately after their leaving Dublin, was to serve as the signal of insurrection to the rest of the kingdom.

The peasants in the districts around the city of Dublin, with scarcely any ammunition or any other arms than pikes, and a few guns, rose at the time appointed, and destroyed the mail-coaches; in that night and on the following day, several skirmishes took place near Rathfarnham, Tallagh, Lucan, Lusk, Dunboyne, Barretstown, Collon and Baltinglass. In all these skirmishes the insurgents were defeated, except at Dunboyne and Barretstown, where small escorts were surprised; of the Reay fencibles at the former; of the Suffolk fencibles at the latter.

Prosperous, in the county of Kildare, was attacked on the 24th by a large body; the barrack was fired, and twenty-eight of the city Cork militia, with their commander, captain Swayne, perished in the flames, or were slain by the pikes of the assailants. At Naas and Kilcullen,

engagements took place on the same morning; the assailants were quickly repulsed and pursued with slaughter; and many taken prisoners and immediately hanged. The insurrection now called for the prompt exertions of the government to suppress it; proclamations were issued by general Lake, by the lord mayor, and by the lord lieutenant. One commanded all but military men, with the exception of magistrates and members of parliament, to remain in their houses from nine at night to five in the morning; and it notified, that orders were conveyed to his majesty's general officers to punish according to martial law, all persons acting, or assisting in the rebellion. This latter proclamation was communicated to the house of commons, who voted an address of thanks, and full approbation of this decisive measure.

On the 25th of May, Carlow was attacked at two o'clock in the morning. The garrison, apprised of the hostile design, was distributed at various posts for the reception of the assailants; during the battle the town was set on fire, eighty houses were consumed, and the number of rebels burned and killed were 400. The progress of rebellion toward the southwest was checked by this repulse, and by discomfitures elsewhere of insurgent parties, particularly at Monaster-evan and Hacketstown; at the former place, the garrison, consisting of eighty-five yeomen, assisted by some volunteers, drove 1000 of the rebels from the town; at the latter above 3000 assailants were charged with such address by a detachment of the Antrim militia, and a body of yeomen under captains Hardy and Hume, as to be completely routed.

On the northern side of Dublin, the only large assembly found in arms was completely routed in the evening of the 26th, on the hill of Tara, by three companies of the Reay fencibles, assisted by lord Fingal

and captain Preston's yeomen cavalry, and captain Molloy's company of infantry. This victory laid open the communication of the metropolis with the northern parts of the kingdom, and other successful movements produced the same effect on the western side. On the 29th a body of rebels who had posted themselves in the village of Rathangan, in the county of Kildare, was dislodged, by a party under the command of lieutenant-colonel Longfield, of the royal Cork militia; alarmed by these defeats, a number of the rebels laid down their arms, and were allowed to retire to their habitations. Public attention was now directed to the county of Wexford, where on the 27th, two large bodies of rebels were collected, one on the hill of Oulart, the other on Kilthomas hill. The latter body was dislodged and put to flight by a body of yeomen from Carnew; at Oulart the rebels were pursued up the hill by a detachment of 110 men of the north Cork militia, under lieutenant-colonel Foote. But rallying at the top of the hill, the rebels made so furious an onset with their pikes, that with the loss of only three killed and six wounded on their side, they slew the whole detachment except the lieutenant-colonel, a sergeant, and three privates.

On the 28th the rebels attacked Enniscorthy with 7000 men, of whom 800 were armed with muskets. After a brave, but fruitless defence, the garrison, consisting of near 300, mostly yeomen and volunteers, were obliged, after the loss of between eighty and ninety of their party, to retreat to Wexford. The insurgents next took post at the Three-Rocks, distant only two miles and a half from Wexford. Disappointed in the expectations of reinforcements from Duncannon fort, the garrison of Wexford formed a resolution to evacuate the town, and Wexford was taken possession of by the rebels without opposition. Meantime many

of the most respectable and wealthy of the Roman catholics published declarations of loyalty, and their abhorrence of the rebellion.

While the southern parts of the county Wexford were in this state, the northern, about Gorey were also frightfully agitated. On the 1st of June, about 4000 rebels proceeded in two columns to the attack of Newton Barry; they entered the town without opposition, as the garrison, consisting of 500 men, under colonel L'Estrange, of the King's County militia, immediately retreated. After a mile's retreat, the troops were led back to the assault, attacked the rebels engaged in plunder and intoxicated, and routed them with great slaughter. The two main bodies of their force were now directed against Ross and Gorey, but their progress towards Gorey was arrested on the 1st of June at Ballycanoo, by a party under lieutenant Elliot, of 40 militia, and fifty yeoman infantry, with three troops of cavalry.

Disappointed of advancing to Gorey, the rebel army retired to Corrigrua hill. Meantime, an army of 1500 men, with five pieces of artillery, under general Loftus, arrived on the 3rd of June; on the 4th general Loftus and colonel Walpole marched with their men in two divisions, and by different roads to attack the post of Corrigrua; the rebels having received intelligence of their motions met Walpole's division with a large force at Tubberneering. His troops were instantly thrown into confusion by a tremendous fire from the fields on both sides of the road; and while he attempted to rally them, he received a bullet in the head; they fled in the utmost disorder to Arklow.

While one body of the Wexford rebels was thus advancing its position toward the north, another was preparing to attempt the same toward the south-west, to co-operate with the disaffected in the counties of

Waterford and Kilkenny. On the 4th of June, the chief division of the rebels took post at Corbet Hill, one mile from Ross. Early on the morning of the 5th, 20,000 of the rebels attacked the town with the greatest fury and succeeded in the gaining a partial possession of it; but the king's troops were soon brought back to the attack by general Johnson in the most gallant manner, and drove the assailants from the town, the outskirts of which were now in flames. A second and third time did the rebels rally, till they were finally repulsed, after an engagement of ten hours, ending about two o'clock in the afternoon. The royal troops, whose number was twelve hundred, lost two hundred and thirty in killed, wounded and missing, of whom ninety were found dead on the scene of action; the enemy left dead two thousand six hundred.

On their retreat from Ross, the rebels set fire to a barn at Scullabogue, at the foot of Carrickbyrne mountain, in which 184 protestants, men, women and children, collected from the adjacent country, were confined, and it was entirely consumed; twenty-five protestants, not included in the above number, were shot and piked at the door.

The town of Arklow was next attacked by about 20,000 rebels, of whom 4000 had muskets, with 3 pieces of artillery; the town was defended by 600 men under colonel Needam. About six o'clock in the afternoon the enemy attacked the town on all sides, except that which is washed by the river; after an engagement of two hours they desisted, and fled in disorder on every side.

In consequence of the decisive measures used by government in the province of Ulster, the spirit of the conspirators had been abated, and their hopes of success diminished: and until news arrived of three successive

victories over the royal army in the county of Wexford, the northerns remained quiet. A considerable number assembled in the vicinity of the town of Antrim, on the 7th of June, designing to seize the magistrates, who had appointed on that day a meeting there. General Nugent, who commanded in that district, ordered a body of troops to march to Antrim, who arrived too late to prevent the rebels from penetrating into the town. They then attacked the insurgents in the town, but their vanguard being repulsed, they were obliged to retreat; at that moment, two reinforcements from Blaris camp and Belfast appeared in sight, on which the rebels fled in all directions. Unsuccessful attempts were also made by small parties at Larne, Ballymena, and Ballycastle. Assembling at Donnegorr-hill, the insurgents were assured that the rest of the northerns would not second their efforts, in consequence of intelligence received that the war in the county of Wexford was of a religious complexion; then destroying or surrendering their weapons, they dispersed to their several homes.

On the day succeeding that of the rising in the county of Antrim, an insurrection commenced in that of Down; a body of insurgents making their appearance near Saintfield, were attacked by some of the king's troops, from Newtown, and dispersed. They then took post at Ballynahinch, on the windmill-hill, and at the house, and in the demesne of lord Moira. On the 12th, general Nugent marched against them from Belfast, with the Monaghan militia, part of the 22nd dragoons, and some yeomen infantry and cavalry: and was joined by colonel Stewart, near Ballynahinch, with his party from Downpatrick, making in all about 1500 men. After a well contested engagement, the insurgents were broken and routed; but again assembled on the mountains of Slive-Croob. Here, after some consultation they finally dispersed.

On the subsiding of this local rebellion in the north-east, another commenced in the south-western quarter in the county of Cork. But the few insurgents who appeared were quickly suppressed, being defeated at Ballynascarty on the 19th of June, by sir Hugh O'Reilly of the Westmeath militia, and major Innes, with a detachment of the Caithness legion.

The Wexford rebels were now left to contend, almost alone, against the royal troops. Since their repulse at Arklow on the 9th, they had committed various depredations, and had attempted to surprize Hacketstown, but soon after retired to Vinegar-hill, which was become their principal station. To surround this post on all sides at once, was the plan of general Lake, and several armies moved from different quarters for this purpose. Generals Dundas, Duff, and Loftus, from the vicinity of Kilcavan; Eustace and Johnson from Ross; and Needham from Arklow and Gorey.

On the 21st of June, at seven o'clock in the morning, the royal troops, at least 13,000 effective men, with a train of artillery, commenced an attack on the station at Vinegar-hill, where 20,000 of the rebels were posted. The town of Ennischorthy was attacked at the stated time by the army from Ross. The rebels for some time maintained their ground obstinately, but perceiving the danger of being surrounded, they fled towards Wexford, through the space which had been destined for the station of general Needham, who had not arrived at the time appointed. On the same day, possession of Wexford was obtained by the royal troops. General Moore, had at the head of 1200 men, in the evening of the 20th, defeated an army of 5 or 6000 men at Goff's bridge; from thence he proceeded to Taghmon, and marching to Wexford, took post on the Windmill-hill within a mile of the town. The rebels had possession of Wexford

for three weeks, during which period, all the protestants of the neighbourhood who could be found, were collected into the jail, and near 100 of them were put to death on the bridge in different parties.

The insurgents now separated into several bodles ; one of which took post at Sledagh, in the barony of Forth ; the other at Peppard's castle. The latter, after pursuing the loyalists of Gorey back to Arklow, and putting thirty-seven men of the refugees to death, bent their march to the Wicklow mountains. The main body at at Sledagh, about 15,000, directed its course to Scolagh gap, burned the town of Killedmond, and gained an entrance into Castlecomer, in the county of Kilkenny. After plundering and burning the town, they were attacked by sir Charles Asgill, who dispersed them with great slaughter. They then resolved to return to their own country, but they were again attacked on the 26th of June, at Kilcomny, and were forced to fly with the loss of their plunder and cannon. Directing their march by the Dwarf woods near Ferns, they took their station in the Wicklow mountains.

Finding themselves now pressed on all sides, without a possibility of maintaining any post, the rebels agreed to disperse to their several places of abode. Yet hostility was elsewhere maintained, by another body of Wexford insurgents, who had directed their march to the county of Kildare, and had united with a party who had eluded the king's troops by rapid movements. In conjunction with these, the Wexford rebels attempted, on the 11th of July, to pass the river Boyne at Clonard, to penetrate into the western parts, and to raise an insurrection there ; but were delayed so long, by the gallant defence of lieutenant Thomas Tyrrel in his mansion house at Clonard bridge, that time was given for the arrival of troops from Kinnegad and Mullingar to

frustrate their design. After some more skirmishing, they were finally dispersed with some slaughter, at Ballybog-hill, near Swords.

With the final dispersion of the Wexfordian insurgents the rebellion was terminated. All this time the capital, vigilantly guarded by a large military force, had enjoyed great tranquillity. Trials and executions had early commenced. On the 20th of June Lord Cornwallis, the new lord lieutenant, arrived. He issued a proclamation on the 29th of June, authorising his majesty's generals to give protection to such insurgents as should surrender their arms, abjure all unlawful engagements, and take the oath of allegiance. To give the full sanction of law to this measure, an act of amnesty was passed in favour of all engaged in the rebellion, who had not been leaders; who had not committed manslaughter, except in the heat of battle; and who should comply with the conditions above-mentioned; but from the benefit of this were excluded James Napper Tandy, and about thirty more, mostly fugitives in France.

The surviving leaders were admitted to a capitulation by government. It was agreed on, that they should give all the information in their power of the transactions of united Irishmen, both internal and with foreign states, without implicating any person whatsoever by name or description, and that they should emigrate to some country particularized by mutual agreement. In consequence of this proposal, several were afterwards examined before the secret committee of both houses of parliament.

Soon after the commencement of the insurrection, the sum of 100,000*l.* was voted by the house of commons, for the immediate relief of such refugees as should appear destitute of the means of subsistence; and for its distribution, a respectable body of commissioners was

appointed, who gave, according to circumstances, sums not exceeding 50l. to each. After their temporary relief, government extended its views to the compensation of loyalists. The sum total of the claims amounted to 1,023,000l.; of which 515,000l. belonged to the county of Wexford alone.

Hitherto the long-promised aid from France had not arrived; but on the 22nd of August, general Humbert landed at Killala in the county Mayo, with 1100 men, of whom seventy were officers. The garrison of Killala, only fifty in number, fled after a vain attempt to oppose the entrance of the French vanguard. On the following day, Ballina, seven miles to the south of Killala, surrendered to the French force. A royal army, more than sufficient in appearance, was quickly assembled at the point of attack. With great expedition generals Hutchinson and Lake arrived at Castlebar; intelligence soon after arrived of the enemy's approach, and the army was drawn to an advantageous position between the town and the advancing French, who appeared at the distance of two miles from Castlebar; at seven o'clock on the morning of the 27th. Humbert's force consisted of 800 men, with two curicle guns, and about 1000 Irish peasants; the French officers ordered their men to file to the right and left, and advance in small bodies under cover of the smoke, to assail the foe in flank. Seized with a strange panic, the royal army shrunk from the assault, broke on all sides, and fled through the town in extreme confusion.

The marquis Cornwallis had determined to march in person against the invaders. On the 26th of August he arrived with his army at Philipstown, and on the succeeding day at Kilbeggan, having advanced forty-four miles in two days by the grand canal. On the 4th of September he arrived at Hollymount, whence he was

preparing to march to the attack of the French at Castlebar ; but received information that the enemy had abandoned that post, and had directed their course to Foxford.

Humbert having ordered the troops left at Killala to repair to the main body, commenced a rapid march early in the morning of the 4th of September, from Castlebar, through Foxford toward Sligo. In the mean time, colonel Crawford, with a body of troops, supported by another under general Lake, hung upon their rear ; general Moore, with a third, observed their motions at a greater distance ; while lord Cornwallis, with the chief army, moved nearly in a parallel direction from Hollymount, through Clare and Ballyhaunis, toward Carrick-on-Shannon. Pursued by such forces from behind, the French leader found himself also opposed in front by another army. Colonel Vereker, of the city of Limerick militia, had marched from Sligo for that purpose, with 330 men and two currie guns. He met and fought the hostile troops when they had passed the town of Coloony on the 5th of September. The colonel, supposing himself engaged with the vanguard only of the French, pressed with eagerness for the victory before the main body should arrive to its relief. Humbert, conceiving the colonel's force to be the vanguard of a great army, attempted only to repulse, not to surround it. Vereker, after a battle of about an hour, was obliged to retreat, with the loss of his artillery, to Sligo, whence he withdrew with his little army to Ballyshannon.

Humbert now directed his march by Drumahair toward Manorhamilton, in the county of Leitrim ; crossing the Shannon at Ballintra, he arrived at Ballynamuck on the 8th of September, so closely pursued that his rear-guard had been unable to break the bridge at Bal-

lintra, while the viceroy, with the grand army, crossing the same river at Carrick-on-Shannon, marched by Mohill to St. Johnstown, in the county of Longford, to intercept him in front in his way to Granard. This movement reduced him to such a situation, that if he should proceed, he must inevitably be surrounded by near 30,000 British forces. In this situation Humbert arranged his forces. The rear-guard was attacked by Crawford, and about two hundred laid down their arms; the rest continued a defence for above half an hour, but on the approach of the main body of Lake's army, surrendered also. Excluded from quarter, the rebel auxiliaries fled in all directions.

While the French were marching from Castlebar, the conspiracy had been embraced by multitudes in the neighbouring counties, particularly Longford. Their plan was to rise round Granard, to seize that post, and thence to attack the town of Cavan, where lay deposited stores of arms and ammunition. They would have surprised the former on the 5th of September, if captain Cottingham had not arrived for its defence by a rapid march from Cavan. With 200 yeomen, he withstood the attack of between 2 and 3000 rebels, five hours, and defeated them with the loss of 400 men; while of the royal army not one was killed, and only two slightly wounded.

A large body still persevered in rebellion in the county of Mayo. No part of the royal forces arrived in the neighbourhood of Killala till the 22nd of September, when, after some discharges of cannon and musketry, the rebel garrison at Ballina, with a French officer, its commander, fled to the former town, the only post remaining. The royal troops, amounting to twelve hundred, with five pieces of artillery, advanced to assail Killala in two columns by different roads. The rebels,

thus surrounded, and driven from their post by a flank ing fire, fled in various directions.

The army of Humbert had been intended only as the vanguard of a more formidable force. A brig from France arrived in the isle of Rutland, in the county of Donegall, on the 16th of September, and landed its crew. Among these was James Napper Tandy, bearing the title of general of brigade in the French service. Informed of the surrendry of Humbert's troops, they re-imbarked.

The principal French armament at length appeared on the 11th of October, near the coast of Donegall; consisting of one ship of the line, and eight frigates, with above 4000 soldiers. Prevented from landing, pursued, and on the next day overtaken by the British fleet of sir John Borlase Warren, the ship of the line was taken, and six of the frigates which made sail to escape were captured in the chase. Another squadron of three frigates, with 2000 troops, destined to co-operate with the former, anchored in the bay of Killala on the 27th of the same month, but on the appearance of some hostile ships, set sail with precipitation, and escaped pursuit. On board the man of war taken by admiral Warren, was found Theobald Wolfe Tone, who had rendered himself remarkable by his activity and talents in the united system. On being condemned, he requested the indulgence of being shot as a soldier, instead of being hanged as a felon; and on the refusal of this request, cut his own throat in prison and died of his wound on the 19th of November.

With the reduction of the ravaging bands, in the mountains of Wicklow, under Holt and Hackett, the last professed champion in arms of the united conspiracy, and with the death of Tone, its chief projector, ended this rebellion.

EXERCISES.

Where did the leaders of the united Irishmen seek assistance? Why did they determine not to wait for it? When did the rebellion break out? What was the success of the rebels in the first engagements? What was the result of their attack of Enniscorthy? What was the issue of the battle of Ross? What was the result of the battle of Vinegar Hill? When did the French land? Where did they land? Where did they beat the king's troops? How did lord Cornwallis proceed against them? What was the result? Where did colonel Vereker engage the French troops? Who defended Granard? What became of the principal French armament? Which of the rebel leaders remained last in arms?

CHAPTER V.

*Act of Union—Peace of Amiens—Rebellion of 1803—
Restoration of the Bourbons—Buonaparte leaves Elba—
Battle of Waterloo—Princess Charlotte.*

A. D. No sooner had the agitation, caused by the rebellion subsided, than the public attention was called to the discussion of a regislative union between Great Britain and Ireland. The nation immediately became divided into unionists and anti-unionists: many meetings were held for the purpose of discussing the question, and resolutions against the measure voted by several bodies. The subject was introduced in the British and Irish parliaments; it was favourably received in the former, but in the latter it was rejected.

A. D. On the re-assembling of parliament, the subject of an union with Great Britain became the principal object of discussion. The opposition to this measure had decreased considerably since the preceding year; and after several animated and interesting debates, a bill passed both houses for the incorporation of the two kingdoms. By this act, Ireland was to be represented in the imperial parliament, by one hundred commoners, four prelates, and twenty-eight temporal peers: for the twenty years next following, the revenue to be levied off Ireland was fixed at two seventeenths; the commercial regulations were established on terms of mutual advantage, and the first of January 1801, the first day of the nineteenth century, was fixed as the time when the two kingdoms should become incorporated under the act of union.

PERIOD VI.

A. D. LIKE the streams of two noble rivers, continually approaching a point from whence they flow 1801. in one body, gradually losing the distinguishing tinge, which marks the soil through which each has flowed, is the history of those two kingdoms, now united in one powerful and distinguished empire. From 1801 the incidents, peculiar to Ireland, are comparatively trivial to those in the preceding periods: while as members of the British empire, Irishmen have been pre-eminently distinguished as statesmen and as soldiers, in the arduous and eventful struggle, which has since taken place in Europe; during which, our empire surmounted

difficulties greater than any nation ever before encountered.

Shortly after the passing of the act of union, the whole of the ministry resigned on account of their inability to carry the measure of catholic emancipation, to accomplishing which, it was understood, that the incorporation of the two kingdoms was a necessary prelude.

A. D. Meantime, a period was put, by the peace of
1802. Amiens, to the war between Great Britain and France.

A. D. The tranquillity, however, thus given to the
1803. country was of short duration. The spirit of usurpation, manifested by France under her first consul, Buonaparte, obliged Great Britain to recommence hostilities on the 18th of May. The dissaffected in Ireland, hoping to profit by the difficulties of the country, made another attempt to dissolve the connection between England and this country. On the evening of the 23rd of June, an insurrection broke out in Dublin; where the chief justice, lord Kilwarden, and his nephew were murdered. The insurgents, however, were immediately defeated by a few peace officers, aided by some of the yeomanry and the military. The principal conspirators, among whom a Mr. Emmet was particularly distinguished by his talents and resolution, were taken and executed.

A contest now commenced in Europe, against the encroachments of France on that balance of power, which is so necessary for the independences of its several states. While the navy of Great Britain swept from off the seas all the fleets of France and of her allies; the different continental powers, who attempted to oppose by land the progress of her armies, were sinking one after another beneath her sceptre. In this almost universal subjugation, the case of no nation was more re

markable than that of France herself. After wading through a sea of blood, in search of a scheme of government, which was to give her what was called liberty and equality ; she found herself under the despotic control of a most extraordinary man, in whose hands she became the tool by which he attempted to gratify the most gigantic schemes of ambition.

A. D. 1808. At length, the resistance of the Spaniards, to the treacherous occupation of their country by a French army under an usurping brother of the French emperor, gave to Great Britain an opportunity of sending a British army to the continent. After some successes and reverses, the conduct of this army was entrusted to lord Wellington, who, after a series of actions, in which the skill of the commander and the valour of his troops were equally conspicuous, succeeded, not only in driving the French out of Portugal and Spain, but also in planting the British colours on French ground. While his operations in the peninsula, shewed the other European powers that French troops might be beaten, they caused a powerful diversion in favour of those who still resisted the yoke of France.

A. D. 1811. This year, in consequence of the indisposition of his majesty, his royal highness, the prince of Wales, was appointed regent of Great Britain and Ireland. Meantime, Buonaparte advanced

A. D. 1812. into Russia, at the head of an immense and well appointed army, and after defeating the Russians in several desperate engagements, penetrated to Moscow, where he intended to winter. But the Russians deprived him of this resource by burning the city, and the French emperor was obliged to retrace his steps in a winter season of unusual severity. During this retreat, his unfortunate troops were exposed to all the hardships

of war, famine, and intense cold, a combination, from which few escaped. This year a war commenced between England and America, which was carried on by both, with more enterprize than advantage.

A. D. The disasters of Buonaparte in Russia, the
1813. successes of lord Wellington in France, and
impatience of the French yoke, at length raised
against their emperor an alliance which proved too
strong, even for him to cope with. He was defeated

A. D. at Leipsic and Dresden, and the victorious allies
1814. penetrating to Paris, Louis XVIII. was restored
to the throne of his ancestors, which Buonaparte
abdicated. The ex-emperor was allowed to retire to
the Island of Elba, retaining the title of emperor.

The repose of Europe seemed now to be established
A. D. on permanent grounds, when to its astonishment
1815. Buonaparte sailed with a few troops to the
coast of France, from whence he travelled in
his coach to the metropolis without the slightest
opposition ; the French monarch retiring to Lisle.
Having collected and organized an army, Buonaparte
advanced, in the month of June, towards Brussels.
His career, however, terminated at Waterloo, where
with a force greatly superior, he attacked the British
army under lord Wellington. This battle, the most
interesting that ever was fought, lasted from sun rise till
evening, when the British army, which had during the
whole day, without yielding an inch of ground, sustained
the fierce and repeated attacks of cavalry and infantry,
supported by a numerous and well served artillery,
was victorious, and decided the fate of Buonaparte. He
soon after surrendered to the captain of a British man of
war, and was conveyed as a prisoner to the island of St.
Helena, where he is closely confined.

While a peace with America, which followed soon

after, put a period to the military operations of Great Britain, the great shock given to trade by the quick transition from war to peace, gave to her domestic affairs an appearance of difficulty, which is, however, fast fading before the returning prosperity of the empire.

The distresses of the empire were greatly increased by a deficiency in the crops of the following year: for some time a famine was apprehended, and the price of all kinds of provisions rose to such an height, as put it out of the power of the greater part of the population to purchase the necessaries of life. Owing, however, to the munificent spirit of individuals, and the judicious application by government, of parliamentary grants, the country was preserved till the return of an unusually abundant harvest.

A. D. This year the princess Charlotte, daughter of
1816. the prince of Wales, and presumptive heir to the crown, was married to prince Leopold of Saxe-Cobourgh, under the happiest auspices. From this marriage, the empire hoped to see an heir to the throne, descended from a princess, whose early virtues had endeared to them her, whom they looked upon as their future sovereign. But the moment which had been anxiously
A. D. looked forward to, by every individual, with
1817. self-interested feelings, proved the source of national disappointment, which was as strongly marked by the expression of individual regret as it was by public demonstrations of sorrow, when it was announced that, shortly after the birth of a still born child, this amiable princess had expired.

During the course of this year, so strong a spirit of dissaffection was manifested in England and Scotland, that parliament suspended the habeas corpus act, and passed an act for the regulation of popular assemblies in

A. D. those two kingdoms. The restoration of tranquillity, however, has in this year, enabled parliament to take off the suspension; and several persons who were confined on suspicion of having been implicated in treasonable practises, have been discharged. The question of catholic emancipation has been repeatedly discussed in parliament, and during the last session, the disabilities under which naval and military officers of that profession laboured, were taken off. Several acts of parliament have been passed, calculated to further the improvement of this kingdom; and several plans have been adopted for its temporal and moral advancement, the developement of which it is to be hoped, will fully justify the anxious wishes of those who are watching over the interests of this country.

EXERCISES.

What question was discussed in Ireland after the suppression of the rebellion? How was this measure received at first in the Irish parliament? Was the bill finally passed? What were the terms of the union, and when was it to take place? What caused the ministry to resign? In what year was peace with France concluded? When did hostilities recommence? What occurred on the 23rd of July 1803, and who were murdered? What was the result of this insurrection, and what became of the leaders? Who was appointed commander in chief of the British forces in Portugal? Was his career successful? Who was appointed regent of the united kingdom, and why? What disasters did Buonaparte encounter in Russia? Who was restored to the throne of France? Did Buonaparte attempt to dethrone him? With what success? What was the final issue of the contest? What royal marriage took place in May 1816? What melancholy event occurred in the year following? What restrictions were taken off the Roman catholics? What acts of parliament have been passed?

RECAPITULATION.

What power did the English parliament exercise with respect to Ireland? What was a subject of contest between the crown and the commons in 1692? What acts were passed by the English parliament respecting Ireland in 1698? When did William III. die, and who succeeded him? When did the Irish parliament begin to assemble biennially? When did queen Anne die, and by whom was she succeeded? What act was passed by the English parliament in 1718, respecting the jurisdiction of the Irish house of peers, and on what occasion? What patent gave great offence to the public in 1724? On what occasion did the king remit his hereditary duties on wool and yarn exported to England? What motions were made respecting the granting of supplies in 1731? What contest arose in 1751 respecting surplus revenue? What invasion of Ireland took place in 1760? When did George II. die, and by whom was he succeeded? What acts were passed respecting the duration of parliaments in 1768? What effect had the American war on Ireland? How was the English parliament prevented from relieving Ireland? From what disabilities were the Roman catholics relieved? What gave rise to the volunteers? When did the English parliament relieve Ireland from her commercial restraints? What was the object of the resolutions of the Dungannon meeting? When was the interference of English privy councils with Irish bills abolished? What bill was passed in 1783, and why? What subject began to occupy the public attention in 1783? How did the English and Irish parliaments act in 1789, and on what subject did they differ? What occurred in France, and how did the revolution affect Ireland? What association was now formed in Ireland, and with what views? When did the rebellion break out? What foreign aid did the rebels receive? What proposal occupied the public attention on the suppression of the rebellion? What were the principal articles of the act of union? What occurred in 1803? When was France conquered by the allies? What led to the battle of Waterloo? What plunged the British empire in grief in 1817?





A

CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE

OF THE

PRINCIPAL EVENTS IN IRISH HISTORY,

FROM THE EARLIEST ACCOUNTS

TO THE

PRESENT TIME.

From the earliest Accounts to the Landing of the Milesians.

A. M.

1969 Partholarians land.

1999 Inhabitants carried off by a plague.

2029 Nemedians arrive.

2246 Fomorians expel the Nemedians.

2657 Belgians or Fírlbolgs arrive.

— Kingdom divided into five parts.

2737 Danonians arrive ; Battle of Moytura.

From the Milesians to the Introduction of Christianity.

2931 Milesians land and overpower the Danonians.

3236 Ollam Fodla reigned.

3596 Kimbath reigned ; abolished the pentarchal division.

3922 Pentarchy restored by Achy III.

— Fileahs driven out of Munster and Leinster.

A. D.

140 Dublin built.

164 Feidlim enacts a law of retaliation.

385 Nial of the nine hostages flourished and brought St. Patrick into Ireland.

From the Introduction of Christianity to the Invasion under Henry II.

448 Christianity preached by St. Patrick.

797 Danes and Norwegians invade Ireland.

— Turgesius fixes himself at Armagh.

893 Normans land and are beaten by the Danes.

1014 Battle of Clontarf.

1153 Wife of O'Ruaro carried off by Dermot Mac Murchad.

1156 Henry II. obtained a bull from Adrian IV. investing him with the kingdom of Ireland.

1167 O Loughlin slain, succeeded by Roderick.

— Dermot MacMurchad is driven out of Ireland,

1168 applies to Henry II. for aid—Engages Strongbow and others to invade Ireland.

Reign of Henry II.

1170 Fitzstephen lands—Wexford taken.

— Colony planted in the Barony of Forth.

1171 Strongbow lands—Waterford taken.

1172 Henry II. lands at Waterford.

1177 John created lord of Ireland.

1185 John visits Ireland.

1188 Roderick retires to the monastery of Cong.

Richard I.

1190 Cathal the bloody handed flourishes.

— Armoric and his detachment cut off.

— Dublin nearly destroyed by fire.

1198 Roderic dies.

John.

1200 Irish chieftains aid the chief governor against de Burgo.

1210 John lands at Dublin.

— Pale divided into counties.

Henry III.

1216 Great charter granted to his Irish subjects by Henry III.

1223 Phelim, son of Cathal, obtains the throne of Connaught.

1231 Richard, earl marshal, driven out of England, murdered in Ireland.

— Phelim visits Henry's court.

1252 Prince Edward, on his marriage, invested with all Ireland.

Edward I.

1278 Irish offer 8000 marks for the free enjoyment of English law.

1280 Renew their application.

1295 Parliament assembles with more than usual regularity.

Edward II.

1313 Edward Bruce lands.

1315 Lands a second time.

1318 Battle of Dundalk—Edward Bruce killed.

1320 College erected by arch-bishop Bicknór.

Edward III.

1361 Lionel, duke of Clarence, comes to Ireland.

1367 Statute of Kilkenny passed.

1373 Sir Richard Pembridge refuses to execute the
commission of chief governor of Ireland.

1376 Irish parliament summoned to Westminster.

Richard II.

1388 O'Nial surrenders to Stanley.

1394 Richard II. visits Ireland.

1398 Earl of March killed.

— Richard II. revisits Ireland.

Henry IV.

1402 Ireland harassed by the Scots.

1408 Black rent paid.

Henry V.

1412 } English of the pale petition the king for a re-
1420 } dress of grievances.

Henry VI.

1423 Parliament unable to vote more than 60 archers
and 12 men at arms for 40 days.

— Eighty marks a year voted to Gerald Kavanagh,
for keeping the peace.

1449 Duke of York chief governor.

Edward IV.

- 467 Parliament vote that the tollage, called black rent,
shall be paid for the use of the army.
1468 Earl of Desmond beheaded.

Edward V. and Richard III.

- 1473 Fraternity of St. George instituted.

Henry VII.

- 1486 Lambert Simnel appears in Ireland,
1487 is crowned at the castle.
1493 Perkin Warbeck attempts to practise his imposture.
— Archbishop of Dublin called to England to give
the king an account of the state of Ireland.
1495 Parliament enacts Poynings' law.

Henry VIII.

- 1523 Francis I. forms an alliance with the earl of Desmond.
1534 Rebellion raised by lord Thomas, son of the earl of Kildare.
1535 Reformation introduced.
1536 ——— established by law.
1541 Title of king of Ireland conferred on Henry VIII.

Edward VI.

- 1551 Liturgy first read in Christ church.

Mary.

- 1556 Bull transmitted from Cardinal Pole for the overthrow of the reformation.

Elizabeth.

- 1560 Reformation re-established by law.
- 1562 O'Nial appears in Elizabeth's court.
- 1572 Attempts made to colonize Ulster.
- 1580 Spaniards land at Smerwick.
- 1581 Earl of Desmond killed.
- 1593 University founded.
- 1595 Tirone takes the fort of Blackwater.
- 1598 ——— defeats Bagnal.
- 1599 Essex made lord lieutenant.
- 1600 Ormond taken by O'Moore.
- 1603 Tirone submits to lord Mountjoy.

James I.

- 1604 Brehon law abolished.
- 1609 Plantation formed in Ulster.
- 1622 Connaught declared to be still vested in the crown.

Charles I.

- 1633 Strafford chief governor.
- 1634 English articles and canons established in Ireland
by a convocation.
- 1640 Strafford prosecuted.
- 1641 Rebellion breaks out.
- 1642 Battle of Kilrush.
- 1643 Ormond concludes a treaty with the confederates.
- 1645 Glamorgan makes a secret treaty with the confederates.
- 1646 Final treaty made by Ormond.
- 1647 Ormond resigns to the parliament.

Commonwealth.

- 1648 Ormond returns and concludes a peace with the confederates.
- 1649 Battle of Rathmines—Cromwell lands.
- 1650 Ormond leaves Ireland.
- 1657 Henry Cromwell sent to Ireland.
- 1658 Royalists declare for Charles II.

Charles II.

- 1661 Act of settlement passed.
- 1665 Explanatory bill passed.
- 1666 Exportation of Irish cattle prohibited.
- 1667 Different manufactures introduced.

James II.

- 1684 Ormond deprived of the government.
- 1685 Roman catholics admitted into corporations and judicial offices.
- 1688 Intelligence received of the revolution in England.
- 1688 Derry declares against king James.

William and Mary.

- 1688 James arrives from Brest.
- 1689 Schomberg lands.
- 1690 King William lands.
- Battle of the Boyne.
- 1691 Athlone surrenders.
- Battle of Aughrim.
- Limerick surrenders.

Anne.

- 1701 Parliament begins to assemble biennially.
- 1703 } Irish peers propose an union with England.
- 1707 }

George I.

- 1715 Duke of Ormond attainted.
- 1718 Contest between the English and Irish lords, respecting the appellant jurisdiction.
- 1724 Opposition to Wood's patent.

George II.

- 1728 Roman catholics deprived of the elective franchise.
- 1731 Motion made for granting the supplies for 21 years.
- 1736 Irish commons vote against the tythe of agistment.
- 1751 Contest respecting the disposal of surplus revenue.
- 1760 French invasion under Thurot.

George III.

- 1768. Bill passed for limiting the duration of parliament to eight years.
- 1778 Ireland distressed by the American war.
- Roman catholics enabled to acquire property in Ireland.
- 1779 Volunteering commences.
- 1781 Dungannon meeting held.
- 1782 Independence of the Irish parliament acknowledged by Great Britain.
- 1783 Order of St. Patrick instituted.
- Citizens of Geneva apply for a settlement.
- 1785 Orde's resolutions discussed.
- 1789 Irish parliament offer to make the prince of Wales regent without restriction.
- 1793 Elective franchise restored to Roman catholics.
- 1796 French fleet appears in Bantry Bay.

- 1798 Rebellion breaks out and is suppressed.
- 1800 Act of union passed.
- 1803 Insurrection breaks out in Dublin—Lord Kilwarden killed.
- 1814 France conquered by the allies.
- 1815 Buonaparte invades France from Elba.
- Is defeated by Lord Wellington at Waterloo.
- 1816 Princess Charlotte married.
- General failure in the crops.
- English and Irish exchequers consolidated.
- 1817 Disaffection manifested in England and Scotland.
- Habeas Corpus suspended there.
- Death of the princess Charlotte.
- 1818 Parliament takes off the suspension of the habeas corpus act.

CORRECT EDITIONS
OF THE FOLLOWING USEFUL
SCHOOL BOOKS,

Are Published by

JOHN CUMMING, No. 16, LOWER ORMOND QUAY.

	£.	s.	d.
Aiken's Poetry for Children, 18mo. -	0	2	2
— and Barbauld's Evenings at Home, -	0	8	1½
Alvays Prosody, 12mo. -	0	1	1
Bailey's Ovid, 8vo. -	0	10	10
Ballard's Guaging, 8vo. new edition. -	0	6	6
Barbauld's Lessons, 2 parts, half bd. in 1 vol. -	0	2	8½
— Hymns, Prose, 18mo. -	0	1	1
Bannier's Ovid, 12mo. new edition. -	0	4	4
Boyce's Pantheon, plates, 12mo. -	0	4	4
Boyer's French Dictionary, 8vo -	0	19	0
— Grammar, 12mo. -	0	4	4
Brown's Classical Dictionary, 12mo. -	0	9	9
Chambaud's Grammar, royal 12mo. -	0	6	6
— Exercises, 12mo. -	0	3	3
— Treasure, 12mo. -	0	3	9½
— Fables, 12mo. -	0	2	2
Charles 12th, French, -	0	4	4
Cicero Delphini, 8vo. new edition, -	0	11	4½
Cicero's office, 12mo. -	0	2	8½
Clarke's Homer, 2 vols. 8vo. new edition, -	1	2	9
— Introduction to making Latin, -	0	2	8½
Complete Letter Writer, with a frontispiece, -	0	3	3
Cornelius Nepos, 12mo. revised and corrected with English Notes, by D. B. Hickie, -	0	3	3
Cooper's History of England for schools, -	0	2	8½
Davidson's Virgil, 2 vols. 8vo. -	1	0	0
Doisy's Dictionary of the Difficulties of the French Language, -	0	5	5
De Fresnoy's Geography, 18mo. -	0	1	7½
Eton Latin Grammar, new edition, corrected by D. B. Hickie, -	0	1	7½
— Cæsar, stereotypc, -	0	2	2

	£.	s.	d.
Eton Eutropius, 18mo. - -	0	1	7½
— Greek Grammar, stereotype,	0	2	8½
Elegant Extracts Prose and Epistles, 8vo.	1	2	9
Elizabeth, in French, 12mo. - -	0	3	3
Enfield's Speaker, 2 vols. 12mo. -	0	7	7
Entick's Latin Dictionary, square, -	0	6	6
— English Dictionary, best edit. -	0	2	8½
Eutropius (Latin) 12mo. - -	0	2	2
Fenning on the Globes, 12mo. - -	0	4	4
French (Genuine) Primer, or Child's first French Book, - - -	0	0	10
— Sequel to ditto, or Key to French Conversation, - - -	0	1	1
— Grammar, 18mo. - - -	0	1	8
Gaultier's French Idioms, new edition,	0	5	5
Gibson's Surveying, 8vo. - - -	0	7	7
Goldsmith's England, 4 vols. -	0	17	4
— abridged, stereotype, - - -	0	4	4
— Rome, 2 vols. - - -	0	7	7
— abridged, stereotype, - - -	0	3	9½
— Grece, 2 vols. - - -	0	7	7
— abridged, stereotype, - - -	0	3	9½
Gordan's Livy, 12mo. - - -	0	6	6
Gough's Arithmetic, 12mo. - - -	0	3	9½
— Spelling, new edition, - - -	0	2	2
Guthrie's Gazetteer, 8vo. - - -	0	13	0
Hatfield's Mythology for Ladies - -	0	6	6
Hawksworth's Telemachus, 12mo. new edit.	0	5	5
Hickie's Literal Translation of Walker's and Murphy's Lucian, - - -	0	4	4
—'s Literal Translation of Ormston's Greek Extracts, - - -	0	4	4
Hodgson's Timber Measurer, 8vo. new edit.	0	10	10
Hoole's Terminations, 12mo. new edit.	0	1	7½
Humphry's Irish Builders Guide, 8vo.	0	16	3
Jackson's Book Keeping, 8vo. - -	0	5	5
Juvenal and Persius, with English notes			
Key to Gough's Arithmetic 12mo. -	0	5	5
— Voster's Arithmetic, 12mo. -	0	4	4
La Henriade, par Voltaire, 18mo. new edit.	0	3	3
Latin Erasmus, 12mo. - - -	0	2	6
— Livy, first five Books, 12mo. -	0	3	3
— Testament, 12mo. - - -	0	3	3

	£.	s.	d.
Latin Cordery, by Willymot, 12mo.	0	2	8½
Leney's Geography, 12mo, col. maps,	0	5	5
Lilly's Latin Grammar, 12mo.	0	1	7½
Murray's Grammar, 12mo.	0	3	3
----- abridged,	0	1	1
----- Reader, 12mo.	0	4	4
----- Exercises,	0	2	2
----- Key to Exercises,	0	1	8
Nelson's Irish Grammar, 8vo.	0	8	8
Ormston's Greek Extracts, new edition,	0	8	8
Patrick's Terence, 2 vols. 8vo.	1	0	0
Perrin's French Grammar, 12mo.	0	3	9½
----- Exercises	0	2	8½
----- Elements,	0	2	2
----- Spelling,	0	1	7½
----- Fables,	0	2	8½
Porney's French Grammar, 8vo.	0	6	6
----- Exercises,	0	2	8½
----- Spelling,	0	2	2
Praval's French Grammar, 12mo.	0	2	2
----- Idioms, 12mo.	0	3	3
----- Syntax, <i>new edition improved</i> <i>and corrected by A. Doisy,</i>	0	4	4
Scott's Lessons in Elocution,	0	3	3
----- Dictionary,	0	4	4
Selectæ Historiæ, 12mo.	0	3	3
Sellon's abridgement of the Bible, 18mo.	0	4	10½
Simpson's Euclid, 8vo.	0	8	8
Smart's Horace, 2 vols. 18mo.	0	6	6
Terence, 12mo. with English notes,	0	3	3
Turner's Geography, 12mo.	0	3	9½
----- Arts and Sciences,	0	3	3
Universal Spelling, best edition,	0	1	1
Virgil Delphini, 8vo.	0	11	4½
Voster's Arithmetic, 12mo.	0	2	8½
Walker's English Dictionary, 8vo.	0	15	2
Wanostrocht's French Grammar, 12mo.	0	3	9½
Wettenhall's Greek Grammar, 12mo.	0	1	7½
----- Latin Grammar, 12mo.	0	1	1
Young's Latin Dictionary, Stereotype	0	14	1





